



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

CH LIBRARIES



7483102 9







Chaucer Society.

Chaucer's 'Boece'

ENGLISH FROM

serilino,

"ANICII MANLII SEVERINI BOETII

PHILOSOPHIÆ CONSOLATIONIS

LIBRI QUINQUE."

EDITED FROM

MS. II. 3. 21, IN THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY,
CAMBRIDGE,

BY

F. J. FURNIVALL,

M.A., TRIN. HALL, CAMBRIDGE; HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXVI.

The Chaucer Society.

Editor in Chief:—Dr F. J. FURNIVALL, 3, St George's Square, Primrose Hill, N.W.
Hon. Sec.:—W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

THE CHAUCER SOCIETY'S PUBLICATIONS.

To do honour to CHAUCER, and to let the lovers and students of him see how far the best unprinted Manuscripts of his works differ from the printed texts, this Society was founded in 1868. There were then, and are still, many questions of metre, pronunciation, orthography, and etymology yet to be settled, for which more prints of Manuscripts were and are wanted; and it is hardly too much to say that every line of Chaucer contains points that need reconsideration. The founder (Dr. Furnivall) began with *The Canterbury Tales*, and has given of them (in parallel columns in Royal 4to) six of the best theretofore unprinted Manuscripts known. Inasmuch as the parallel arrangement necessitated the alteration of the places of certain tales in some of the MSS, a print of each MS has been issued separately, following the order of its original. The first six MSS printed have been: the Ellesmere (by leave of the Earl of Ellesmere); the Hengwrt (by leave of W. W. E. Wynne, Esq.); the Camb. Univ. Libr., MS Gg. 4. 27; the Corpus, Oxford; the Petworth (by leave of Lord Leconfield); and the Lansdowne 851 (Brit. Mus.). The Harleian 7334 has followed.

Of Chaucer's *Minor Poems*,—the MSS of which are generally later than the best MSS of the *Canterbury Tales*,—all the available MSS have been printed, so as to secure all the existing evidence for the true text.

The *Trilinus* Parallel-Text from the 3 best MSS has been issued, and a 4th MS text of it with the englishit Boccaccio Comparison.

To secure the fidelity and uniform treatment of the texts, Dr F. J. Furnivall has read and will read all with their MSS.

Autotypes of most of the best Chaucer MSS have been published.

The Society's publications are issued in two Series, of which the first contains the different texts of Chaucer's works; and the Second, such originals of and essays on these as can be procured, with other illustrative treatises, and Supplementary Tales.

Messrs Trübner & Co., of 57 & 59, Ludgate Hill, London, E.C., are the Society's publishers, Messrs R. Clay and Sons of Bungay its printers, and the Alliance Bank, Bartholomew Lane, London, E.C., its bankers. The yearly subscription, which constitutes Membership, is two guineas, due on every 1st January, beginning with Jan. 1, 1868. *More Members are wanted. All the Society's Publications can still be had. Those of the first year have been reprinted.*

Prof. Child, of Harvard College, Cambridge, Massachusetts, is the Society's Honorary Secretary for America. Members' names and subscriptions may be sent to the Publishers, or to the Honorary Secretary,

W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

FIRST SERIES.

The Society's issue for 1868, in the **First Series**, is,

- I. The Prologue and Knight's Tale, of the *Canterbury Tales*, in 6 parallel Texts (from the 6 MSS named below), together with Tables, showing the Groups of the Tales, and their varying order in 38 MSS of the Tales, and in 5 old printed editions, and also Specimens from several MSS of the "Moveable Prologues" of the *Canterbury Tales*.—The Shipman's Prologue, and Franklin's Prologue,—when moved from their right places, and of the Substitutes for them. (The Six-Text, Part I.)

| II. The Prologue and Knight's Tale from the Ellesmere MS. | | Part I. |
|---|-----------------------|---------|
| III. " " " " " " " | Hengwrt " 154 | " " |
| IV. " " " " " " " | Cambridge " Gg. 4. 27 | " " |
| V. " " " " " " " | Corpus " Oxford | " " |
| VI. " " " " " " " | Petworth " " | " " |
| VII. " " " " " " " | Lansdowne " 851 | " " |

(separate issues of the Texts forming Part I of the Six-Text edition.)

The issue for 1869, in the **First Series**, is,

| VIII. The Miller's, Reeve's, and Cook's Tales: Ellesmere MS. | | Part II. |
|--|---------------|--|
| IX. " " " " " " " | Hengwrt " " | } with an Appendix of "Gaucelyn" from six MSS. |
| X. " " " " " " " | Cambridge " " | |
| XI. " " " " " " " | Corpus " " | |
| XII. " " " " " " " | Petworth " " | |
| XIII. " " " " " " " | Lansdowne " " | |

(separate issues of the Texts forming the Six-Text, Part II, No. XIV.)

Chaucer's 'Boece'

ENGLISHT FROM

"ANICII MANLII SEVERINI BOETHII

PHILOSOPHIÆ CONSOLATIONIS

LIBRI QUINQUE."

EDITED FROM

MS. II. 3. 21, IN THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY,
CAMBRIDGE,

BY

F. J. FURNIVALL,

M.A., TRIN. HALL, CAMBRIDGE; HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

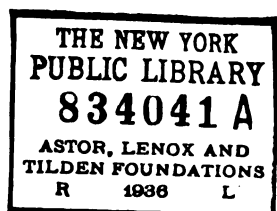
LONDON:

PUBLISHT FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO.; 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXVI.





To the Memory of
HENRY BRADSHAW,

IN HIS DAY

THE BEST CHAUCER SCHOLAR IN ENGLAND.

First Series,

LXXV.

—
R. CLAY AND SONS, CHAUCER PRESS, BUNGAY.

ROY WAIN
2.10.17
MASS.

CONTENTS.

| | | | | | | PAGE |
|------------------------|---------|-----|-----|-----------|-----|------|
| FOREWORDS | ... | ... | ... | ... | ... | iii |
| CHAUCER'S BOECE. | BOOK I. | | | | | |
| 1st Metre | ... | ... | 1 | 1st Prose | ... | 2 |
| 2nd „ | ... | ... | 3 | 2nd „ | ... | 4 |
| 3rd „ | ... | ... | 5 | 3rd „ | ... | 5 |
| 4th „ | ... | ... | 7 | 4th „ | ... | 7 |
| 5th „ | ... | ... | 13 | 5th „ | ... | 15 |
| 6th „ | ... | ... | 16 | 6th „ | ... | 17 |
| 7th „ | ... | ... | 19 | | | |
| BOOK II. | | | | | | |
| 1st Metre | ... | ... | 22 | 1st Prose | ... | 19 |
| 2nd „ | ... | ... | 24 | 2nd „ | ... | 22 |
| 3rd „ | ... | ... | 26 | 3rd „ | ... | 24 |
| 4th „ | ... | ... | 30 | 4th „ | ... | 27 |
| 5th „ | ... | ... | 35 | 5th „ | ... | 31 |
| CHAUCER'S 'Former Age' | | | 36 | | | |
| CHAUCER'S 'Fortune' | | | 38 | | | |
| 6th Metre | ... | ... | 43 | 6th Prose | ... | 40 |
| 7th „ | ... | ... | 47 | 7th „ | ... | 43 |
| 8th „ | ... | ... | 48 | 8th „ | ... | 47 |
| BOOK III. | | | | | | |
| 1st Metre | ... | ... | 50 | 1st Prose | ... | 49 |
| 2nd „ | ... | ... | 53 | 2nd „ | ... | 51 |
| 3rd „ | ... | ... | 56 | 3rd „ | ... | 54 |
| 4th „ | ... | ... | 58 | 4th „ | ... | 56 |

Book III (*continued*).

| | PAGE | | PAGE |
|------------------|------|------------------|------|
| 5th Metre | 60 | 5th Prose | 58 |
| 6th „ | 61 | 6th „ | 60 |
| 7th „ | 62 | 7th „ | 62 |
| 8th „ | 64 | 8th „ | 62 |
| 9th „ | 68 | 9th „ | 64 |
| 10th „ | 74 | 10th „ | 69 |
| 11th „ | 79 | 11th „ | 74 |
| 12th „ | 83 | 12th „ | 80 |

Book IV.

| | | | |
|------------------|-----|------------------|-----|
| 1st Metre | 86 | 1st Prose | 85 |
| 2nd „ | 92 | 2nd „ | 87 |
| 3rd „ | 95 | 3rd „ | 92 |
| 4th „ | 101 | 4th „ | 96 |
| 5th „ | 103 | 5th „ | 102 |
| 6th „ | 111 | 6th „ | 104 |
| 7th „ | 114 | 7th „ | 112 |

Book V.

| | | | |
|------------------|-----|------------------------|-----|
| 1st Metre | 117 | 1st Prose | 115 |
| 2nd „ | 119 | 2nd „ | 118 |
| 3rd „ | 123 | 3rd „ | 119 |
| 4th „ | 129 | 4th „ | 125 |
| 5th „ | 132 | 5th „ | 130 |
| | | 6th and last Prose ... | 133 |

| | |
|--|-----|
| Index and Glossary by Mr W. M. Wood | 141 |
|--|-----|

FOREWORDS.

As this Li. 3. 21 is the best MS. of Chaucer's *Boece*, I have not thought it worth while to make a Parallel-Text of it with inferior MSS, but have just printed it by itself,¹ and sent out with it Dr Richard Morris's edition of the Addit. MS. 10,360, as issued by the Early English Text Society in 1868. These will be enough material for an Editor, so far as the English text is concerned. The other requisite is the Latin text; but as that can be bought for 2s. or so, in Peiper's edition of the *De Consolatione* and Minor Works in Teubner's Library—and doubtless elsewhere—the Chaucer Society need not issue a fresh edition of it.

There is plenty of work to be done in the way of comparing Chaucer's English and Boethius's Latin. Some of the points Dr Morris notist in his Introduction. I will only now pass on to the future Editor of Chaucer's text the notion of our lamented friend HENRY BRADSHAW, that Chaucer's explanations or paraphrasings² of the Latin text, his *Glosae* on it, should be distinguished by a different type from his englishings of that text. The recollection of this came back to me only yesterday; and I take at haphazard, as a sample of the plan, the 11th Metre of the 3rd Book. Let the reader first turn to p. 79 of the text, and read it right through. He can't tell what is Boethius and what is Chaucer. He gets a hint from the first *Glosa*, but is not told where that stops, or where the second begins or stops. Let him then read the same page as arranged overleaf,³ and all is clear:—

¹ Henry Bradshaw and Dr Richard Morris both agreed in this.

² I call em Chaucer's, tho believing that they are englishings of some Latin commentator's. How Metre V of Book II, *Felix nimium prior aetas*, made Chaucer break into the beautiful *Former Age*, p. 36, is well known. The prose and verse renderings should be compared. In this MS. Chaucer's Balade of '*Fortune*' follows on p. 38-40.

³ I don't of course pledge Henry Bradshaw's memory to the details of my arrangement. Had he livd, he'd have surely betterd em.

| | | |
|---|--|---|
| Who so that sekith soth by a depe thoght | Quisquis profunda mente uestigat uerum | 1 |
| And coueyteth nat to ben de- seyuyd by no mys weyes | Cupitque nullis ille deuuis falli, | |
| lat hym rollen <i>and</i> trenden with- Inne hym-self / the Lyht of his inward syhte/ | In se reuoluat intimi lucem uisus | |
| And lat hym gadere ayein enclyn- ynge in to a compas the longe moeuynge of hys thowhtes / | Longosque in orbem cogat inflec- tens motus | 4 |
| And lat hym techen his corage that he hath enclosed <i>and</i> hyd / | Animumque doceat quidquid extra molitur | 5 |
| in his tresors / al þat he compaseth or sekith fro <i>with</i> owte/ | Suis retrusum possidere thesauris. | |
| And thanne thilke thing that the blake cloude of errour whilom hadde y-couered | Dudum quod atra texit erroris nubes, | |
| shal lyhten more clerly thanne phebus hym selfe ne shyneth/ | Lucebit ipso perspicacius Phoebo. | |
| /Glosa/ /Who so wole seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / <i>and</i> wol nat be deceyuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe // lat hym wel examine / <i>and</i> rolle <i>with-inne</i> hym self the nature <i>and</i> the pro- prietes of the thing/ <i>and</i> lat hym yit eft sones examine <i>and</i> rollen his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // <i>and</i> lat hym techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche y- hyd <i>with-in</i> it selfe alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben in thinges <i>with-owte</i> // And thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mysknow- ynge shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vnderstondynge thanne the sonne ne semyth to syhte <i>with</i> owte forth / | | |
| ffor certes the body bryngynge the weyhte of foryetynge / ne hath nat chasyd owte of yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowyng / | Non omne namque mente depulit lumen | 9 |
| ffor certeynly the seed of sooth haldith <i>and</i> clyueth <i>with-in</i> yowre corage | Obliuosam corpus inuehens molem. | |
| | Haeret profecto semen introrsum ueri | |

and it is a-waked *and* excited Quod excitatur uentilante doc-
by the wynde *and* by the blastes trina. 12
of doctryne//

ffor wherefor elles demen ye of Nam cur rogati sponte recta cen-
yowre owne wyl the ryhtes setis,
whan ye ben axed //

but yif so were þat the norys- Ni mersus alto uiueret fomes
synges of reson ne lyuede .I.- corde? 14
pLOWNGYD in the depthe of
yowre herte/

this is to seyn how sholden men
demen þe sooth of any thing þat
weere axed / yif ther neere a
Roote of sothfastnesse þat weere
ypLOWNGYD *and* hyd in the nature
pryncyplis / the whiche sothfast-
nesse lyued with-in the depnesse
of the thowght/

and yif so be þat the Muse *and* Quod si Platonis musa personat
the doctryne of plato syngyth uerum, 15
sooth //

al þat euery whyht lerneth / he Quod quisque discit immemor
ne doth no thing elles thanne recordatur. 16
but recordeth as men recordyn
things þat ben foryetyn.

The advantage of this plan is so obvious, that some of our Members may say, 'Why didn't you print us an edition thus arranged?' My answer is, 'Because I hadn't time.' My object in the Society is to provide future editors with the best material, to give them the best hints I can for preparing a new edition of Chaucer's Works, and then leave them to do it in their own way. All my work for all my Societies is—and has been for some years—in arrear, and when I was printing the *Boece* MS, I had just time to print it, and no more. I don't like to ask Messrs Clay how long the plates have been waiting for the Index and Glossary—which Mr W. M. Wood has now made, with the help of Dr Morris's Glossary, and a reference or two to me—and these short Forewords.

If hereafter I can get any leisure for more Chaucer work than completing what is already in hand, I may perchance try my hand at a new edition of the *Boece*.

3, St George's Sq., Primrose Hill, N.W.
Good Friday, April 23, 1886.



CHAUCER'S BOECE.

BOOK I.

[MS. li. 3. 21. *University Library, Cambridge, vellum, ab. 1420,*
leaf 9, back.]

¶ The fyrste Metur [*in margin*]

A Las .I. wep¹[yng am constreyned to bygyn-]nen vers of
sorwful matere/ /pat whilom in] floryssynge [studie made
delitable ditees] For lo Rendynge Muses of poetes enditen
to me thinges to ben writen / *and* drery vers of wrecched- 4
nesse / weten my face *with* verray teeres/ /at the leeste no drede
ne myhte ouercomen tho Muses pat they ne weeren felawes / *and*
foleweden my wey / pat is to seyn whan I was exiled / thei pat
weeren glorie of my yowthe² / whilom weleful *and* grene / conforten 8
now the sorful wierdes³ of me olde man⁴/ /For elde is comyn vnwarly
vp on me hasted by the harmes pat .I. haue / *and* sorwe hath com
aundid his age to ben in me/ /heeres hoore arm shad ouertymeliche
vpon myn heued / *and* the slake skyn tremblyth of myn emptyd 12
body/ /thilke deth of men is weleful pat ne comith nat in yeres pat
ben swete / but comyth to wrecches often yclepyd // Allas allas *with*
how deaf an Ere / deth cruwel torneth a-wey fro wrecches *and*
nayetth to closyn wepynge eyen / whil fortune vnfeithful / fauorede 16
me *with* lyhte goodes the sorwful howre pat is to seyn the deth /
hadde almost dreynt myn heued/ /but now for fortune clowdy hath
chaungyd hyre deceyuable cheere to meward / Myn vnpietous lyf
draweth a long vnagreable dwellynges in me/ /O ye my frendes what 20
or wherto auauntede ye me to ben weleful / For he pat hath fallen
stood nat in stidefast degree /

¹ A bit of the MS. has been cut out for its pretty initial. For the words in brackets, compare Dr. Morris's ed. from Addit. MS. 10,340, E. E. T. Soc. 1868, p. 4.

² pelage [?: hypelage, a change (of cases)] *in margin*

³ gloss: i. fata.

⁴ Antithesis *in margin*.

The firste prose [leaf 11, margin]

W Hile þat I. stille recordede thise thinges with myself /
and markede my weply compleynthe with office of
poyntel/ /I sawh stondinge a-bouen the heyhte of
4 myn heued a womman of ful gret reuerence by sem-
blaunt/ /Hyr eyen brennyng and cleer seyng ouer the comune myht
of men / with a lyfly coloure / and with swych vygor and strengthe
þat it myhte nat ben emted/ /Alle weere it so þat she was ful of so
8 gret Age / þat men ne wolden nat trowen in no manere þat she weere
of owre elde/ /the stature of hir was of a doltows / Iuggement / for
som tyme she constreynede and shronk hyr seluen lyk to the comune
mesure of men/ /and sumtyme it semede þat she towchede the
12 heuene with the heyhte of hyr heued/ /and whan she hef hyr heued
hyere / she procede the selue heuene / so þat the syhte of men look-
yng was in ydel/ /hyr clothes weeren makid of riht delye thredes /
and subtil craft of perdurable matere/ /the whiche clothes she
16 hadde wouen with hyr owne handes / as .I. knewh wel ¹After by hyr
self / declaryng and shewyng to me the beaute / The whiche clothes
a dirknesse of a forletyn and a despised Elde hadde duskid and
derked / as it is wont to dyrken the smokede ymages/ /In the
20 nethereste hem or bordure of thise clothes / men redder ywouen in
A grekyssch / p² / þat syngnifieth the lyf actyf/ /and abouen þat lettre
in the heyeste bordure a grekyssch / t³ / þat singnifieth the lyf con-
templatyf/ /and by-twixen thise two lettres ther weeren seyn degrees
24 nobely ywroght in manere of laddres / by whiche degrees men
myhten clymbyn fro the nethereste lettre to the vppereste/ /natheles
handes of some men hadden koruen þat cloth by vyolence and by
strengthe / and eueryche man of hem hadde born a-wey swiche peeces
28 as he myhte geten / and forsothe this forseide wouman bar smale
bookes / in hyr ryht hand/ /and in hyr left hand she baar a ceptre/
/and whan she say thise poetical Muses a-prochen a-bowte my bed /
and endityng wordes to my wepynges/ /she was a lytel amoued and
32 glowede with cruwel eyen/ /who quod she hath suffred a-prochen to
this sike man / the comune strompetes of swich a place þat men
clepyn the theatre/ /The whiche nat oonly ne asswagen nat hise

¹ leaf 11, back.

² practik in margin.

³ theorik in margin.

sorwes with none remedies / but they wolden feeden and norryssyn
 hym with swete venym // fforsothe thise ben tho / þat with thornes
 and prykkynge of talentus or affeccyons / whiche þat ne ben nothing
 fructefiynge / nor profytable / destroyen the corn plentyuous of fruites 4
 of resone // For they holden hertes of men in vsage / but they
 delyuere nat foolkes fro maledye // but yif ye muses hadden
 withdrawnen fro me with yowre flateryes / any vnkunynge and
 vnprofitable man as men ben wont to fynde comunly amonges the 8
 poeple / I wolde wene suffre the lasse greuously // For whi in swich
 an vnprofitable man myn ententes ne weeren nothing endamaged /
 /but ye withdrawnen me this man þat hath be norrysshed in the
 studies or schooles of Eliaticis and of Achademicis in grece // but 12
 goth now rather away ye Mermaydenes / whiche þat ben swete til it
 be at the laste / and suffreth this man to be ¹Cured and heeled by
 myne Muses þat is to seyn by noteful sciences // and thus this com-
 panye of Muses Iblamyd / casten wrothly the cheere downward to 16
 the Erthe shewynge by rednesse hyr shame / they passeden sorfully
 the threshfold // and .I. of whom the syhte plownged in teeres /
 was dyrked so þat I ne myhte nat knowen / what þat womman
 was of so Imperial auctorite / I wax al abaysshed and astoned / and 20
 cast my syht down to the Erthe // and by-gan stille for to abyde
 what she wolde don afterward / tho com she ner and sette hyr down
 vp on the vttereste cornere of my bed / / and she byholdynge my
 cheere / þat was cast to the Erthe heuy and greuous of wepyng / 24
 compleyde with thise wordes þat I shal seyen the perturbacyon of
 my thowht.

The .2.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 12, back*]

Allas how the thowt of man dreynt in ouerthrowynge dep-
 nesse / dulleth and forletith his propre cleernesse / 28
 Myntyng to goon in to foreyne dyrknesses as ofte as his
 anoyos bysynesse wexeth with-owte mesure / þat is
 dryuen to and fro with wordely wyndes / this man þat whilom was
 free / to whom the heuene was opyn and knowen // and was wont to 32
 goon in heuenlyche paathes / and sawh the lythnesse of the Rede

¹ leaf 12.

sonne/ /and sawgh the sterres of the colde Moone // and which
sterre in heuene vseth wandrynge recourses .I.-flyt by diuerse speeres.
This man ouercomere hadde comprehendyd al this by nowmbyr of
4 a-countynge in Astronomie // and ouer this he was wont to seken the
causes whennes the sownynge wyndes moeuen and bysien the smothe
water of the see/ /and what spiryt torneth the stable heuene / and
whi the sterre aryseth owt of þ^e Rede Est / to fallen in the westrene
8 wawes // and what atempreth the lusty howres of the fyrst somer
seson / þat hyhteth and aparailleth the Erthe with rosene flowres/
/ and who maketh the plentyuous Autompne in fulle yeres fletith
with heuy grapes // and ek this man was wont to telle the diuerse
12 cawses of nature þat weeren .I.-hydde/ /Allas now lith he emted
of lyht of his thowht/ /and his nekke is pressed with heuy cheynes
/ and berith his cheere enclyned a down / for the grete weyhte and
is constreynyd to looken on the fool erthe

The ij^{de} prose [*Margin, leaf 13, back*]

16 **B**Vt tyme is now quod she of Medicine Moore than of com-
pleynte / Forsothe than she entendynge to me ward with
alle the lookynge of hyr eyen seyde // Art nat thow he
quod she/ /þat whilom norysseid with my Mylk and fostered
20 with myne Metes weere escaped and comyn to corage of a parfit man/
/ Certes I yaf the swiche armures / þat yif thow thy self ne hadde
fyrst cast hem a-vey / they sholden han defended the in sikernesse /
þat may nat ben ouercomyn knowestow me nat // whi artow stille /
24 it is for shame or for asthonyng/ /it weere me leuer þat it weere for
shame // but it semith me þat astonyng hath oppressed the/ /and
whan she say me nat oonly stille / but with-owten office of tunge /
and al dowmb // she leyde hyr hand softly vp on my brest / and
28 seyde/ /her nis no peril quod she/ /he is fallen in to a litarge /
/ which that is a comune sykenesse to hertes þat ben desseyuyd/ /he
hath a litel foryeten hym self // but certes he shal lyhtly remenbren
hym self / yif so be þat he hath knowen me or now / and þat he may
32 so doon / I wol wyppen a litel his eyen þat ben derkyd by the clowde of
mortal thinges/ /Thise wordes seyde she / and with the lappe of hir

garnement Iplited in a frounce / she dryede myn eyen / þat weeren
 fulle of the wawes of my wepynges

The .3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 14*]

THus whan þat nyht was descussed *and* chased a wey / dirk-
 nesses for-leften me // *and* to myne eyen repoyrode hir fyrst 4
 strengthe / *and* ryht by ensauple as the sonne is hid whan
 the sterres ben clustred / þat is to seyn whan sterres ben
 couered with clowdes / by a swifte wynde þat heyhte chorus/ *and*
 that the fyrmament stant dirked / by wete plowngy clowdes *and* þat 8
 the sterres nat apeeren vp on heuene // so that the nyht semeth sprad
 vp on Erthe/ /yif thanne the wynd þat hyhte boryas / Isent owt of
 the kaues of the contre of trace / betith this nyht // þat is to seyn
 chaseth it a wey // *and* descouereth the closed day/ /thanne shyneth 12
 phebus yshaken with sodeyn lyht // *and* smyteth with his beemes
 in mervelynge Eyen

The 3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 15, back*]

RIht so *and* non oother wyse / the clowdes of sorwe dissolued
and don a wey // I took heuene *and* resseyuede Mynde to 16
 known the face of my fesissien/ /so þat I sette myn eyen
 on hir *and* fastned my lookynge / .I. behoolde my norryse
 philosophie ¶ in whos howses I hadde conuersed / *and* haunted fro
 my yowthe / *and* I seide thus // O thow maystresse of alle vertuus 20
 descended from the souerein sete ¶ whi artow comyn in to this
 solitarie place of myn exil/ /Artow comyn for þou art maked
 coupable with me of false blames ¶ O *quod* she my norry / sholde I
 forsaken the now / *and* sholde I nat parten with the by comune 24
 trauayle / the charge þat thow hast suffred for enuye of my name/
 /Certes it nere nat leueful ne sittinge thing to philosophie / to leten
 with-owten compaygnie the wey of hym þat is innocent ¶ sholde I
 thanne redowte my blame / *and* agrysen as though ther weere by- 28
 fallen a newe thing/ /For trowestow þat filosofie be now alder-
 first assailed in perils by foolk of wikkede manners ¶ hAue I nat
 striuen / with ful gret strif in olde tyme / by fore the age of my
 plato / ayenis the foolhardinesse of folie // *and* ek the same plato 32

lyuynge / his mayster Socrates desseruete victorie of vnryhtful deth
in my presence // ¶ the Eritage of the which socrates / the Eritage
is to seyn ¶ the doctrine of the whiche socrates in his opinioun of
4 felicite / þat I clepe welefulnesse / whan þat the poeple of Epicur-
iens and stoyciens / and many oothre enforseiden hem to gon
rauyssse euerich man for his part / þat is to seyn þat euerich of hem
wolde drawen to the defence of his opinion / the wordes of socrates /
8 / they as in partye of hir preye to-drowen me cryinge and debatinge
ther ayeins ¶ and koruen and to-renten my clothes / þat I hadde
wouen with myn handes ¶ and with tho clowtes that they hadden
Arraced owt of my clothes / they wenten away wenyng þat [I] hadde
12 gon with hem euerydel / In whiche Epicuriens and stoyciens / for
as moche as ther semede some traces or steppes of myn habite / the
folie of men wenyng the epicuriens and stoiciens my famuleres
peruertede² some / thorw the errour of þe wikkede or vnkuynnye
16 Multitude of hem / this is to seyn þat for thei semede philosophres
thei weeren pursued to the deth and slayn // So yif thou hast nat
known the exilinge anaxogore / ne the enpoysonyng of socrates ne
the tormentus of zeno / for they weeren straungeres / yit myhtestow
20 han known þe seneciens and þe canyos and the sorans of which
folk / the renon nis neyther ouer old / ne vn-solempne / the whiche
men nothing elles ne browhte hem to the deth / but oonly for they
weeren enformyd of myne maneres / and semeden most vnlyk to the
24 studies of wikkede folk / and forþi þou owhtest nat to wondren /
thowh þat I in the bittre see of this lyf / be fordryuen with
tempestes blowyng a-bowte / in the whiche tempestes this is my
moost purpos / þat is to seyn to displesen to wikkede men / Of
28 whiche shrewes al be the oost³ neuer so gret / it is to despise for it
nis gouerned with no ledere of Reson / but it is rauysed only by
fleetyng Errour folyly⁴ and lythly // and yif they som tyme
Makyng an oost ayeins vs / assayle vs as strengere / owre ledere
32 drawith to-gydere hise rycheesses in to his towr / and they ben
ententyf abowte sarpuleris or sachels vnprofitable for to taken / but
we þat ben heye a-bouen sykyr fro alle tumolte and woode noyse

¹ leaf 16. ² gloss: a persequendo. ³ id est acies. ⁴ i sine consilio.

warnestored *and* enclosyd in swich a palis/ /whider as chateringe or
 a-noyenge folye ne may nat atayne/ /we schorne swiche rauyneres
and henteres of fowleste thinges

¶ The ferthe Metur [*margin, leaf 16, back*]

WHo so it be þat is cleer of vertu / sad *and* wel ordinat 4
 of leuyng // þat hath put vndir foot the prowde
 wierdes¹ *and* lookith vpriht vp on eyther fortune /
 he may his cheere holde vndescounfited ¶ the Rage ne
 the manesses of þe see commoeuyng or chasinge vpward heete fro 8
 the botme / ne shal nat moeue þat man Ne the vnstable moun-
 taygne þat hihte veseuus þat writith owthorw his brokene chymynees
 smokyng fyres / ne the way of thonderlyht þat is wont to smyten
 heye towres / ne shal nat moeue þat man/ /whar to thanne // ¶ O 12
 / wrechches drede ye tyrauntus þat ben woode *and* felonos with-owte
 any strengthe/ /Hope after no thing² ne drede nat *and* so shaltow
 desermen³ the Ire of thilke vnmyhty tyraunt // ¶ but who so þat
 quakyng dredith / or desireth thyng þat nis nat stable of his ryht / 16
 þat man þat so doth / hath cast away his sheld / *and* is remwed from
 his place / *and* enlaceth hym in the cheyne with the which he may
 ben drawn

¶ The verthe prose [*margin, leaf 21*]

Felistow *quod* she thise thinges / *and* entren thei awht in thi 20
 corage // Artow lik an asse to the harpe / whi wepistow /
 whi spillestow teeres/ /yif thou abydest after help of thi
 leche / the by-houeth discouere thi wownde // tho .I. þat
 hadde gaderyd strengthe in my corage / answerede / *and* seyde/ 24
 /*and* nedeth it yit *quod* I of rehersyng / or of amonicion *and*
 sheweth it nat .I.-nowgh by hym self the sharpnesse of fortune /
 þat wexeth wood ayeins me / ne moeueith it nat the to sen the face
 or the manere of this place⁴ / is this the librarye / which þat þou 28
 haddest chosyn / for a ryht certeyn sete to the in myn hows / ther
 as thou desputedest ofte with me / of the sciences of thinges /
 towchinge deuynye / *and* mankynde / was thanne⁵ myn habite

¹ i. fata.

² leaf 17.

³ MS. desernien or deseruien.

⁴ glossed prison.

⁵ leaf 21, back.

swich as now / was my face or my cheere swich as now // whan I
sowhte with the secretus of nature whan þou enformedest my maneres
and the reson of alle my lyf / to the ensauple of the ordre of
4 heuene / is nat¹ this the gerdouns þat I referre to þe to whom I haue
be obeysaunt / Certes thou conformedest by the Mowht of plato
this sentence / þat is to seyn þat comune thinges or comunalityes
weeren blysfyl / yif thei þat hadden studied al fully to wysdom
8 gouerneden thilke thinges / Or elles yif it so byfille / þat the
gouernoures of comunalityes studieden to geten wysdom / thow
seydest ek by the Mowth of the same plato / þat it was a necessarye
cause whise men to taken and desire the gouernaunce of comune
12 thinges / for þat the gouernementus of Citees yleft in the handes of
felonos tormentours citesiens / ne sholde nat bryngen in pestelence
and destruccion to goode fookk / and ther-for I folwinge thilke
Autorite² desired to putten forth in excussion and in acte of comune
16 administracion thilke thinges þat I hadde lerned of the / among my
secre restingwhiles // thow and god þat puttethe in the thowhtes
of whise fookk / ben knowynge³ with me / þat nothing ne browhte
me to maystrye or dignete / but comune studie of alle goodnesse /
20 / and ther-of comth it þat by-twixen wikked foolkes and me han ben
greuos descordes / þat ne myhten nat ben releued by preyer⁴ // For
this liberte hath the freedom of conscience þat / the wraththe of
moore myhty foolkes / hath alwey ben despysed of me for sauacion of
24 Ryht / how ofte haue I recisted and with-stonde thilke man þat
hyhte coningaste / þat maade alwey assawtes ayeins the prospere
fortunes of poore feeble fookkes / how ofte ek haue I put of or cast
owt / hym trygwille prouost of the kynges hows / bothe of the
28 wronges þat he hadde bygunne to don and ek fully performed /
/ how ofte haue I couered and deffended by the Autorite of me put
ayeins perils // þat is to seyn put myn autorite in peril for the
wrechched poore foolkes / þat the couetyse of straungeres vnpun-
32 yssed tormenteden alwey with myseyse⁵ and greuauces owt of
nowmbre / neuer man ne drowh me yit fro ryht to wronge /
whan I say the fortunes and þe Richesses of poeple of þe prouinces

¹ glosst nonne.

² glosst .s. platonis.

³ gloss .i. est inexorabile.

⁴ gloss : concij.

⁵ leaf 22.

ben harmyd or amenused owther by pryuey Raueynes or by comune
tributus or cariages / as sory was I as they þat suffreden the harm
/ glosa/ /whan þat theodoric þe kyng of gothes in a dere yer
hadde hise gernerres ful of corn / and comaundede þat no man ne ⁴
sholde byen no corn tyl his corn weere solde / and þat at a greuos
deere prys/ /Boece withstood þat ordinaunce and ouer-com it
knowynge al this the kyng hym self/ /Coempcion) is to seyn
comune achat or byinge to-gidere þat weere estabelyssed vp on the ⁸
poeple by swich a manere imposicion) / as who so bowhte a bossel
corn he moste yeue the kynges the fifte part // Texte // whan it was
in the sowre hungry tyme / ther was estabelissed or cryed greuos and
vnplitable coempcion) þat men sayen wel it sholde gretly turmenten ¹²
and endamagen al the prouince of compaygne/ /.I. took stryf ayeins
the prouost of the pretorie for comune profit / and the kyng know-
ynge of it / .I. ouer-com it so / þat the coempcion) ne was nat axed
ne tok effect/ /Paulyn a consoler of Rome / the Rychesses of the ¹⁶
which paulyn / the howndes of the palyse / þat is to seyn the
officeres wolden han deuowred bi hope and couetise / yit drowh
I hym owt of the Iowwes of hem þat gapeden/ /and for as moche as
the peyne of the accusacion) aiuged by-forn / ne sholde nat sodeynly ²⁰
henten ne punisse wrongfully albyn a conseylor of Rome/ /.I. putte
me ayeins the hates and indignaciouns of the accuser Cyprian/ /is it
nat thanne Inowgh I-sene þat .I. haue purchased grete discordes
ayeins my self // But I owhte be the moore assured ayeins alle oothre ²⁴
foolk¹ / þat for þe loue of Ryhtwisesse I ne reseruyd neuer no
thing² to my self / to hem³ward of the kynges halle / by which I
weere the moore siker/ /but thorw tho same accusors acusinge I am
condempned/ /Of the nowmbyr of the whiche acusors oon basilicis ²⁸
that whilom was chased owt of the kynges seruise ⁴is now compellyd
in accusinge of my name for nede of foreyne moneye / Also opylion
and caudencius han accused me / al be it so þat the iustice Regal
hadde whilom demed hem bothe to gon in to exil / for hir trecheryes ³²
and fraudes with-owte nowmbyr/ /To whiche Iugement they nolden
nat obeye but defendedyn hem by the sikernesse of holy howses /

¹ gloss : scilicet romayns.

² gloss .i. affinite.

³ gloss .s. officers.

⁴ leaf 22, back.

þat is to seyn fledden in to sentuanye/ /and whan this aperceyuyd
to the king he comaundede þat but they voidede the Cite of Rauenne
by certeyn day assingned / þat me sholde marke hem on the forheued
4 with an hoot yren and chasen hem owt of the towne/ /Now what
thing semeth myhte ben lykned to this crwelte / ffor certes thilke
same day was resseyued the accusynge of my name by thilke same
accusers/ /what may ben seyde her to¹ / hap my studie and my
8 kunnyng deseruyd thus or elles the forseide dampnacion of me /
made þat / hem ryhtful accusers or no²/ /was nat fortune asshamyd
of this/ /Certes alle hadde nat fortune ben asshamyd þat innocens
whas accused. / yit owte she han had shame of the fylthe of myne
12 accusours/ /but axestow in somme of what gylt y am accused / men
seyn þat I wolde saue þe compaygnye of the senatours/ /and desires
thow to heeren in what manere/ /I am accused þat I sholde han
destorbed the accuser to beren lettres / by whiche he sholde han
16 makyd the Senatoures gylty ayeins the kynges Real maieste/ /O
maysteresse what demestow of this/ shal I for-sake this blame / þat I
ne be no shame to the³ // Certes I haue wold it þat is to seyn the
sauacion of the senat / ne I shal neuer leten to wilne it / and I
20 confesse and I am a-knowe / but the entente of the accuser to ben
destorbed shal cese // ffor shal I clepe it thanne a felonye or a synne
/ þat I haue desired the sauacion of the ordre of the senat⁴/ /and
certes yit hadde thilke same senat don by me thorw hir decretus and
24 hir Iugementus as thogh it weere a synne and a felonye / þat is to
seyn to wilne the sauacion of hem⁴ // but folye þat lieth alwey to
hym self may not chaunge the merite of thinges/ /ne I trowe nat by
the Iugement of socrates þat it weere ⁵Leueful to me to hide the
28 sothe / ne assente to Leesynge/ /but certes how so euer it be of
this / I put it to gessen or prisen to the Iugement of the and of
whise folk // Of whiche thing al the ordinaunce and the sothe/ /for
as mooche as foolke þat ben to comyn after owre dayes shellen
32 knowen it/ /I haue put it in scripture / and in remembraunce /
/ ffor thowching the lettres falsly makid / by whiche lettres I am
accused to han hooped the fredom of Roome/ /what aperteneth

¹ gloss: quod dicit nichil.

² gloss: quod dicit non.

³ gloss: q. d. dubito quid.

⁴ gloss .s. senat.

⁵ leaf 23.

me to speke ther-of / the fraude hadde ben shewid apertly / yif I hadde had liberte for to han vsed *and* ben at the confessioun of myne accusours the whiche thing in alle needes hath gret strengthe // For other freedom may men hoepen / Certes I wolde þat som 4 other freedom myhte ben hopyd / I wolde thanne han answered by the wordes of a man þat hyhte Canyus / ffor whan he was accused by Gayus cesar germeynes sone / þat he was knowynge *and* consentynge of a coniuration y-maked ayeins hym¹ // this 8 canyus answerede thus / yif I hadde wist it þou haddest nat wist it / in which thing sorw hath nat so dilled my wit / þat I pleyne oonly þat shrewede folk² apareylen felonies ayeins vertu / but I wondre gretly how þat they may parforme thinges þat they han 12 hoped forto don / For whi wilne shrewednesse þat comth per-audenture of owre defaute / but it is lyk a Monstre *and* a meruayle / how þat in the present syhte of god / may ben acheued *and* performyd swiche thinges as euery felonos man hath conceyued in his 16 thowht ayeins innocentus // For which thing oon of thy famyleres nat vnskylfully axed thus / yif god is whennes comen wykkede thinges / *and* yif god ne is whennes comyn goode thinges / but al hadde it ben leueful / þat felonos folk / þat now desiren the blod *and* the 20 deth of alle goode men / *and* ek of alle the senat / han willned to gon *and* destroyen me / whom they han seyen alwey bataylen / *and* defenden goode men / *and* ek al the senat / yit had I nat desserued of the faderes þat is to seyn of the senatoures / þat 24 they sholden willene my destruccion / thow remembrest wel as I gesse / þat whan I wolde doon or seyen any thing / ²Thow thy self alwey present rwledest me / at cite of Verone whan þat the kyng gredy of comune slawhtre caste hym to transpor vp al the ordre 28 of the senat / the gylt of his real maieste / of the whiche gylt þat albyn was accused / with how gret sykernesse of peril to me / deffendede I al the senat / thow woost wel þat I seye soth / ne I ne auuncede me neuer in preysynge of myself / For alwey whan 32 any wyht resseyueth presious renon in a-vauntynge hym self of his werkes / he amenuseth the secre of his consience / but now thou mayst wel seen / to what ende I am comyn for myne Innocence /

¹ gloss .s. gayus

² leaf 23, back.

/ I resseyue peyne of fals felonye for gerdoun of verray vertu / and
 what opyn confession of felonye / hadde euer Iuges so a-cordaunt in
 crwelte / þat is to seyn as myn accusinge hath / þat eyther errours
 4 of mannes wit / or elles condicion of fortune þat is vncerteyn to alle
 mortal folk ne submittede some of hem / þat is to seyn þat it ne
 enelinede som Iuge to han pite or compassion / For al thogh I
 hadde ben accused þat I wolde brenne holy howses and strangle
 8 preestes with wykkede swerde or þat I hadde greythed deth to alle
 goode Men // Algates the sentence sholde han punyssed me present
 confessed or committ / but now I am remwed fro the Cite of
 Roome almost fyue hundred thowsand paas / I am with-owte
 12 defence dampned to proscripcion and to the deth / for the studie
 and bowntes þat I haue doon to the senat / but O¹ wel ben they
 worthi of merite as who seyht nay / ther myhte neuer yit non of
 hem be conuict of swich a blame as myne is / of whiche trespass
 16 myne accusors sayen ful wel the dignete / the whiche dignete for
 they wolden dirken it with medlynge of som felonye / they baren
 me an hand and lyeden / þat I hadde polut and defowled my
 conscience with sacrilege² / for coueytise of dignete / and certes thou
 20 thi self þat art plaunted in me chasedest owt of the sege of my
 corage / alle coueytise of mortal thinges / ne sacrelege ne hadde no
 leeu to han a place in me by-forn thyne eyen / For thou
 droppedest euery day in myne Eres / and my thouwt³ / thilke
 24 comaundement of pictagoras / þat is to seyn Men shal serue to godde
 and nat to goddes⁴ / ne it nat conuenient ne no nede to taken help
 of the fowlest spirite // I þat thou hast ordeyned and set in swiche
 excellence þat thou makedest me lyk to god / and ouer this the Ryht
 28 clene secre chaumbyr of myne hows þat is to seyn my wyf / and the
 compaygnye of my honest freendes / and my wyues fadyr / as wel
 holy as worthi to ben reuerenced thorw his owne dedes / defenden
 me from alle suspencion of swich blame / but O malice for they þat
 32 accusen me taken of the philosophre feyth of so gret blame / for they
 trowen þat I haue had affinite to malefice or enchauntement / by
 cause þat I am replenysshed and fulfylled with thy thechinges and

¹ gloss ironice, and in margin O meritos.

² gloss sorcerie.

³ leaf 24.

⁴ in margin, Homo debet seruire deo et non diis.

enformyd of thy maneres/ /and thus it suffiseth nat oonly þat thy
 Reuerence ne avayle me nat/ /but yif þat thow of thy fre wille
 rather be blemished with myn offencion/ /but certes to the harmes
 þat I haue / ther bytydeth yit this encre of harm/ /that the 4
 gessinge and the Iugement of moche folk/ /ne looken no thing to
 the desertus of thinges/ /but oonly to the auenture of fortune/ /and
 Iugen þat oonly swiche thinges ben purueyed of god / whiche þat
 temporal wele-fulnesse commendith/ /glose/ /as thus / þat yif a 8
 wyht haue prosperite he is a good man / and worthi to han þat
 prosperite/ /and who hath aduersite he is a wikked man and god
 hath forsake hym / and he is worthi to han þat aduersite/ /this is
 the opinion of some folk/ /and ther-of comth þat good gessinge / 12
 fyrst of alle thing forsaketh wrechches/ /certes it greueth me to
 thinke riht now the diuerse sentences þat the poeple seyth of me /
 and thus moche I seye þat the laste charge of contrarios fortune is
 this / þat whan þat any blame is leyd vp-on a caytyf / Men wenen 16
 þat he hath desserved þat he suffreth // And I þat am put away fro
 goode men and despoyled of dignetees/ /and defowled of my name
 by gessyng / haue suffred torment for my goode dedes // Certes me
 semeth þat I se the felonos couynes of wikked men habownden in 20
 Ioye and in gladnesse/ /and I se þat euery lorel shapith hym to
 fynde owt newe fraudes for to accuse goode folk/ /and I se þat
 goode men beth ouerthrowen for drede of my peril / and euery
 luxurious tormentour dar doon aH felonye vnpunnyshed/ /And ben 24
 excited þer-to by yiftes // And Innocentus ne ben nat oonly despoyled
 of sikernesse/ /but of defence And ther-fore me lyst to cryen to god
 in this wise///

¶ The fifthe metur [margin, leaf 25, back]

O Thow makere of the whel þat bereth þe sterres / which þat 28
 art yfastned to thy perdurable chayer / And tornest the
 heuene with a Rauessyng sweyh / And constreynest the
 sterres to suffryn thi lawe / so that the Mone som tyme
 shynyng wyt here ful hornes / Metyng with alle the beemes of the 32
 sonne hir brother / hydeth the sterres þat ben lesse / And somtyme

¹ leaf 24, back.

wan the Moone paale with hir derke hornes aprocheth the sonne
 leeseth hir lyhtes // And that the eue sterre hesperus which that in
 þe fyrste tyme of the Nhyht 'bryngeth forth hyr colde Arysnynges /
 4 Cometh est ayein hyr vsed cours / and is paale by the morwe at
 rysyng of the sonne / and is thanne clepyd lacyfer / Thow
 restreynest the day by shorter dwellyng in the tyme of colde wynter /
 þat maketh the leeuës falle // Thow diuident þ^e swyft tydes of
 8 the nyht / wan the hoothe somer ys comyn / thi myht a-tempreth
 the varyauntus sesoun of the yer / so þat zephirus the deboneyre
 wynd brengeth aȝein in the first somer sesoun the leeuës þat þe
 wynd þat hihte boriās hath reft away in autumpne / þat is to seyn
 12 in the laste ende of somer / And the sedes that the sterre that
 hihte arcturus sawgh / ben waxen hye cornes / wan the sterre
 Syryus eschaufed hem / ther nis nothyng vnbownde fram his oolde
 lawe ne forleetheth þ^e werke of his propre estat / O thow gouernour
 16 gouernynge alle thynges by certayn ende / whi refowsestow oonly to
 gouerne the werkes of men by dwwe manere / whi suffres thow þat
 slydyng fortune torneth so grete entrechaunginges of thynges So
 that anoyos payne þat sholde dwellyn punyshe felonūs punyshe
 20 Innocentes and foolk of wykkede maneres sytten in heere chayres /
 / And anoyinge foolk treden and þat vnryhtfully oon þ^e nekkes of
 hooly men / and vertu clere shynynge naturely is hid in dirke
 derkenesses / and the ryhtful man bereth the blame / and the payne
 24 of þ^e felon / Ne forswerynge / ne the fraude couered and kembd
 with a fals coloure ne anoyeth nat to shrewes / the weche shrewes
 wan hem lust to vsen here strengthe / thei reiōysen hem to puttyn
 vndyr hem / the souereyne kynges / weche þat poeple with-howtyn
 28 Nowmbyr dredyn / O tow what so euer þou be þat knyttest alle
 bondes of thynges / looke on thise wrecchede Erthes / we men þat
 ben nat A fowle partye / but A fayre partye of so grete werk / we ben
 tormentyd in this see of fortune / Thow gouernour withdrawh and
 32 restryne thei rauesynge floodys / and fastne and ferme thise erthes
 stable / with thilke bonde by whiche thow gouerneste the heuene /
 / that is so large.

The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 27, back*]

WHan .I. hadde *with* continuel sorwe sobbed or borken
owt^t thise thinges she *with* hir chere pesyble *and*
nothing^t amoeued *with* my compleyntes / seyde thus/
/whan .I. say the *quod* she soruful *and* wepynge. .I. 4
wyste anon that^t thow were a wrechche *and* exiled / but .I. wyste
neuer how ferre thine exil was / yif thi tale nadde shewyd it me/ /but
certes al be thow fer fro thy contre thow nart nat put^t owt of it^t / but
thow hast^t fayled of thi wey *and* gon amys *and* yif thow hast leuere 8
for to wene þat þow be put^t owt of thi contre/ /than hast thow put
owt thi self / rather than any oþer wyht hath // For no wyht ¹But
thy self^t ne myhte neuer han don þat to the For yif thow remembre
of what contre thow art bōrn/ /It nis nat gouernyd by emperours / 12
ne by gouernement of multitude / as weren the contres of athenes/
/but oo lord *and* oo kynge / *and* þat is god þat is lord of thi contre /
whiche that^t reyIoyseth hym of the dwellyng of hise Cytesenis / And
nat for to put hem in exil. // Of the whiche lord it ys a souerayne 16
fredom to ben gouernyd by the brydul of hym / *and* obeye to hys
Iustyce / hasthow foryetyn thylke ryht olde lawe of thi Cite / In
the weche cyte yt ys ordeyned *and* establysshed / þat what^t whyht^t
þat hath leuer fownden there-in hys sete or his hows than ellys were 20
he may nat be exiled by no ryht from that^t place/ /For who so þat
is contyned in *with* the palys *and* the clos of thilke Cite / ther nis
no drede þat he may desserue to ben exiled / but who so þat leteth
the wyl for to enhabyte there / he for-leteth also to deserue to ben 24
Cytesein of thilke cyte/ /So þat .I. sey þat the fate² of this place ne
moueth me nat so mochel as thine owne fate / Ne .I. axe nat rather
the walles of thi lybrarye aparayled *and* wrowht^t *with* yuory *and*
with glas / than after the sete of thy thowht^t // In wyche .I. put nat^t 28
whilom bookes / but I. put þat that makeþ boekys worthi of prys / or
presyous / þat ys to seyn the sentense of my bookes/ /And certeynly of
thy desertes bystowyd in comune good / thow hast seyde soth but
after the multitude of thi goode dedes / thow hast seyde fewe/ /And 32
of the honeste or of the falsnesse of thinges that ben aposyd ayeins

¹ leaf 28.

² *gloss i. manera.*

16 *Boece is so troubled that light Remedies must be us'd to him. [BOOK I.
God has set a time for all things. Be patient. [PROSE 5, METRE 6.*

the Thow hast remenbryd thinges þat ben knowyn to alle foolk' /
and of the felonyes and fraudes of thine Acusours / it semeth the
haue .I.-twoched it forsothe ryhtfully and shortly / Al myhten tho
4 same thinges betere and moore plenteuously ben cowth in the
mowth of the poeple þat knoweth al this // Thow hast ek blamed
gretly and compleynynd / of the wrongful dede of the senat' / and
thow hast sorwed for my blame / And thow hast wopen for the
8 damage of thi renoun þat is apayred / And thi last sorwe eschaufede
ayeins fortune and compleynest' ¹þat Gerdouns ne ben euenelyche
yolden to þe desertes of foolkes // And in þ^e latere ende of thi² woode
muse thow preyedest þat thilke pees þat gouerneth þ^e heuene /
12 sholde gouerne the erthe / but for þat manye trybulasyouns of
affeccyouns han assayled the / and sorwe and ire and wepynge to
drawen the diuersely as thow art now feeble of thowht' / myhtyere
remedies ne shullen nat yit' thowchyn the / For which we wol vsen
16 somdel lyhtere medycynes / So þat thilke passyuñs þat ben woxen
hard in swellynge by perturbasyouns / fflowyng in to thi thowht' /
Mowen wexen esy and softe to reseyuen the strengthe of a more
myhty and moore egre medycene by an esyere towchyng

¶ The sixte metur [margin, leaf 29]

20 **W**An þat the heuy sterre of þ^e cankyr eschaufeth by the
beemes of phebus / þat ys to seyn / wan þat phebus the
sonne ys in the sygne of the cankyr / wo so yeueth
thanne largely hise seedes to the feeldes þat refusen to
24 Reseyue hem³ / lat hym gon bygyled of trust þat he hadde to hys
corn / to Accornes of Okes / yif thow wolt gadery vyolettes / ne
go thow nat to the purple wode / wan the feeld chyrkyng
agryseth of coolde / by the felnesses of the wynde þat hyhte
28 Aquylon / yif thow desyrest or wolt vsen grapes ne seke thow nat
with a glotonos hond to stryne and presse the stalkes of the vyne
in the first somer sesoun / For bachus the god of wyne hath rather
yeuyn hise yiftes to Autumpne / the latyr ende of somer. // God
32 tokneth and assygneth the tymes ablinge hem to heere propres offices
/ ne he ne suffreth nat' / the stowndes whiche þat hym self hath

¹ leaf 28, back.

² gloss .s. sementis.

³ gloss .s. corn.

deuyded *and* constreyned to ben .I.-medled to gydere / And forth
he þat forleteth certeyn ordinaunce of doynge by ouerthrowynge
wey / he ne hath no glade issw or ende of hys werkes.

¶ The syxte prose [margin, leaf 31]

FYrst woltow suffre me to towche *and* Assaye the estat of thi 4
thowht by a fewe demaundes // So þat .I. may vndirstonde
what be the manere of thi curacion / Axe me *quod* .I. at
thi wille what thou wolt / *and* .I. shal answer / tho
seyde she thus / wheyther weenesthow *quod* she that this world be 8
gouerned by foolyssh happes & fortunows / or elles þat ther be in it
any gouernement of Resoun / *Certes quod* .I. / .I. ne trowe nat in
no manere þat so certeyn thinges / sholden be moeued by fortunows
fortune // But .I. woot wel þat god makere *and* mayster is gouernor 12
of his werk / Ne neuer nas yit day þat myhte put me owt of the
sothnesse of þat sentence // So is it *quod* she / for the same thinge
songe thou a lytul her byforn / *and* by-wey-ledest *and* by-weptest /
þat oonly men weren put owt of the cure of god / ffor of alle 16
oether thinges / thou ne dowtest nat þat they nere gouerned by
resoun / But ow¹ / .I. wondre gretly certes whi þat thou art syk /
syn þat thou art put in so holsom a sentence / but lat vs sekyn
deppere .I. coniecte that ther lacketh .I. not nere what / But sey 20
me this / syn þat thou ne dowtest nat that þis world be gouerned
by god / with which gouernayles takestow heede þat is gouerned //
Vn²nethe *quod* .I. knowe .I. the sentense of thi question / so þat .I.
ne may 3yt Answeren to thi demaundes // .I. nas nat desseyued *quod* 24
she þat ther ne fayleth som what / by whiche the maledye of thi
perturbacyon is krypt in to thi thowt / so as the strengthe of þe
pals chynnyng is opyn / But sey me this / remembres thou what is
the ende of thinges / *and* whider þat the entensyn of alle kynde 28
tendeth // .I. haue herd yt toold som tyme *quod* .I. / but
drerynesse hath dilled my memorye / *Certes quod* she thou woost
wel / whennes þat alle thinges ben comyn *and* procedeth / .I. woot
wel *quod* .I. *and* Answerede þat God ys bygynny[n]g of alle // And 32

¹ gloss: .i. pape, [παπας, an exclamation].
BOETHIUS.

² leaf 31, back.
o

how may this be *quod* she / that syn thou knowest the bygynnyng
of thinges / *pat* thou ne knowest nat what is the ende of thinges /
/ But swiche ben the customys of pertubaciouns / And this power
4 they han *pat* þey may moeue a man owte of his place / *pat* is to seyn
fro the stablenesse *and* perfeccoun of his knowynge // But certes
thei may nat al arrace hym ne alyene hym in al / but .I. wolde *pat*
thou woldest Answer to this / Remenbresthou *pat* þou art a man /
8 Boece whi sholde .I. nat remembre *pat* *quod* .I. / *Philisophye* //
Maysthou nat telle me þanne *quod* she what thinge is a man /
Axestow me nat *quod* .I. wheither *pat* .I. be A resonable mortal beest /
.I. woot wel *and* .I. confesse wel *pat* .I. am it // wyldesthou neuer
12 yit *pat* thou were any other thinge *quod* she / no *quod* .I. / now
woot .I. *quod* she oother cause of thi maledye *and* *pat* ryht grete //
Thou hast left forto knowen thi self what thou art / thorw whiche
.I. haue pleyntly frownde the cause of thi maledye / or elles the entre
16 of recoeueringe of thin heele // for whi for thou art confwndyd
with foryeetynge of thi self / for thy sorwestow *pat* thou art exilyd
of thi propre goodys / And for thou ne wost what is the ende
of thinges / for thy domesthou *pat* felons *and* wykkyd men
20 ben myhty *and* weleful / And for thou ast foryeeten by whiche
gouernement the world is gouerned // for thi wenestow *pat* þise
Mutacyouns of fortune fletyn with-owte gouernor / These ben grete
causes nat oonly to Maledye / but certes grete causes to thi deth / but
24 .I. thanke the ¹ Auctor *and* the makere of heele *pat* nature hath
nat alle for-letyn the / I haue grete norryssynges of thin heele //
And *pat* ys the sothe sentence of gouernaunce of the worlde / *pat*
thou byleeuest *pat* the gouernynge of it nis nat subiect ne vndyr-
28 putte to þe folie of these happes Auentros / but the resoun of God /
and ther-for dowte the nothinge / for of / this lytul sparke / thin hete
of lyf shal shyne / But for as meche as it is nat tyme yit of fastere
remedies / And the nature of thowhtes desseyued is this // that as ofte
32 as they casten Away sothe opyniouns / thei clothen hem in false
opyniouns / of which false opyniouns the dirkenesse of *perturba wexit*
vp / *pat* confwndeth the verray insyhte / And *pat* dirkenesse shal

.I. assaye som-what / to maken thinne and wayk by lyhte *and*
Meenelyche remedyes / So þat after that þat the dirkenesse of
desseyuyng desiringes is don a-wey / thow mowe knowe the
shynyng of verray lyht 4

¶ The seuende Metyr [*margin, leaf 32, back*]

THe sterres couered with blake clowdes ne mowen yeten a
doun no lyht / yif the trowble wynde þat hyht Auster /
turnyng *and* waluyng the see medleth the hete þat is to
seyn the boylyng up fro the botme / the wawes þat whilom 8
weeren cleere as glas / *And* lyk to þe fayre cleere dayes *and* brihte
withstand anon the syhtes of men / by the fylthe *and* ordure þat is
resoluyd / *And* the fletyng strem þat Royleth down diuersly / fro
hy mountaynes is arested *and* resisted ofte tyme by the encoun- 12
tryng of A stoon / þat is departyd *and* fallyn fram som Roche / *And*
for-thi yif thow wolt lookyn / *And* deemen soth / with cleer lyht /
And holden the wey with a ryht path / weyue thow Ioye // dryf fro
the drede / fleme thow hoope / ne lat no sorwe aproche / that is to 16
seyn / lat non of thise iiij passyouns ouercomen the or blende the /
for clowdy *and* dirke is thilke thowt *and* bownde with brydles /
were as thise thinges reygne /

Explicit liber primus
Incipit secundus liber.

[BOOK II.]

¶ The fyrst prose [*margin, leaf 34, back*]

Afftyr this she stynte a lytul / *And* after þat .I. hadde 20
gadered by atempre stillenesse myn atencioun // she seyde
thus / as who so myht seyn thus / after thise thinges
she stynte a lytul / *And* whan she aperseyuyd by
atempre styllenesse / þat .I. was ententyf to herkene here / she 24
bygan to speke in this whise // yif .I. *quod* she haue vndyrstondyn
and knowen owtrely the causes *and* the habyt of thi maledye / thow

languyssest *and* art defeted for desire *and* talent of thi rather fortune /
she þat ilke fortune oonly þat is changed as thow feynest to þ'
ward / hath peruertyd the clernesse *and* the estat of thi corage/ /.I.
4 vndirstonde the feele fold colours *and* deceytes of thilke meruayles
Monstre fortune / And how she vseth ful flaterynge famylaryte with
hem that she enforseth to by-gyle / So longe tyl þat she confounde
with onsufferabele sorwe hem / that she hath left in dyspeyre vnpur-
8 ueyed/ /And yif thow remenbrest wel the kynde / the maneres And
the desert of thilke fortune / thow shalt wel knowe / þat as in hir
thow neuere ne haddest / ne hast. yloost any fayr thinge // but as .I.
trowe .I. shal nat gretly travaylen to do the remenbre on thise thinges/
12 for thow weere wont to hurtelyn *and* despysen hir with manly
wordes / wan she blawndyssynge *and* present / And purswedest hir
with sentenses / þat weren drawn ow't of myn entre / þat is to sayn /
of myn enformasyoun / but no sodeyn mutacyon / ne bytydeth nat
16 with-owte a manere chaungynge of corages/ /And so is it byfallyn þat
thow art a lytel departyd fro the pes of thi thought // but now
is tyme þat thow drynke *and* ataast some softe *and* delitable thinges/
so þat wan þey ben entred with-in the / it mowe maken wey to
20 strengere drynkes of medicines/ ¹ Com now forth ther-fore the
suacyon of swetenesse Rethoryen / whiche þat goth oonly the ryht
wey / whil she forsakyth nat myne estatutes/ /And with rethorice
com forth Musyce A damysel of oure hows / þat syngeth now lyhters
24 moedes or probasyons now heuyere // what eyleth the man what is
it þat hath cast the in to mornynge *and* into wepynge/ /.I. trowe
þat thow hast seyn som newe thinge *and* vnkowth // thow weenest
þat fortune be chaungyd ayein the / but thow weenes wrong yif
28 thow that weene/ /Alwey tho ben hir maneres / she hath rather kept
as to þe wrard / hir propre stabylnesse standeth in the chaunyng of
hir self / Ryht swich was she wan she flateryd the *and* desseyued
the / with vnleffful lykynges of fals welfulnesse // thow hast now
32 knowyn *and* ataynt the doughtous or dowble vysage of thilke blynde
goddesse fortune / she þat yit coueryht and wymplith hir to oother
foolkes / hat shewed hir euerydel to the/ /yif thow aprouest hir *and*

thinkest þat she is god / vse hir maneres / and pleyne the nat' / And
yif thow agrysyst hyr false trecherye / despyse and cast a-way hir
þat pleyyth so harmfully // ffor she þat is now cause of so mochel
sorwe to the . sholde ben cause to the of pes and of Ioye // she hath 4
forsakyn the forsothe / the whiche þat neuer man may ben sykyr þat
she ne shal forsake hym / /Glose/ /But natheles some bookes han
the texte thus // fforsothe she hath forsakyn the / ne ther nis no
man sykyr þat she ne hath nat forsake // holdestow thanne thilke wele- 8
fulnesse presyes to the þat shal passen / And is present fortune dere-
worthe to the / which þat nis nat feythfulle for to dwelle / and wan
she goth away þat she bryngeth a wiht in sorwe / for syn she may
nat ben witholden at a mannys wille / she maketh hym a wrecche 12
wan she departyth fro hym / what oother thinge is flyttygne fortune /
but a manere shewynge of wrecchyddnesse þat is to comyn // ne it ne
suffiseth nat oonly to lokyn on thyng þat is present by-forn the
eyen of a man / but wysdom loeketh and amesureth the ende of 16
thinges / And the same chaungynge fram oon in to A nother / þat is
to seyn from Aduersite into pros¹perite / Maketh / þat the manesses of
fortune ne ben nat for to dreden / ne the flaterynge of hir to ben
desired // thus at the laste yt by-houeth the / to suffren wit euene 20
wylle / in paciense / Al þat is don in with the floor of fortune /
þat is to seyn / in this world Syn thow hast ones put thi necke
vndyr þ^e yok^e of hir / ffor yif thow welte wryten a lawe of wen-
dynge and of dwellynge to fortune which þat thow hast chosyn 24
freely to ben thi ladye / Artow nat wrongful in þat / and makest
fortune wroth and Aspere by thine in-pacience / And yit þou mayst
nat chaunge hyr // yif thow commyttest and bytakest thi sayles to
the wynde / thow shalt be shouen nat thedyr þat thow woldest but 28
whedyr þat þe wynde showueth the / yif thow castest thi sedes in
to the feeldes thow sholdest han in mynde þat the yeres ben
Amonges / owther wyle plenteuous and oper while barayne / thow
hast by-taken thiself to the gouernaunce of fortune / And forþi yt 32
be-houeth the to ben obeysaunt to the maneres of thi lady / En-
forcest thow the to Aresten or with-holden the swyftnesse and the

¹ leaf 35, back.

22 *Fortune reckes not the Weepings of the Wretched. She clad [BOOK II.
the naked Boece with wealth, and now withdraws it. [METER 1, PROSE 2.*

swey³ of hir turnynge wheel/ /O thow fool of alle mortal fooles /
yif fortune by-gan to dwelle stable she cesede thanne to ben fortune.

¶ The fyrst metur [*margin, leaf 36*]

4 **W**An þat fortune with a prowde Ryht Hand hath torned hir
chaungynge stowndes / she farith lik the maneres of
the boylinge Eurippe/ /Glosa // Eurippe is an arm
of the see that ebbith *and* floweth / *and* som tyme
the strem is on o syde *and* som tyme on þ^e oþer/ /Texte // she crwel
8 fortune casteth adown kynges þat whilom weren / ydrad / And she
deceyuable enhanseth vp the Vmble cheere of hym þat is descounfited
// Ne she neyther heeryth ne rekkeþ of wrecchede wepynges / *and* she
is so hard þat she lyssheth *and* scorneth the wepynges of hem the
12 whiche she hath makyd wepe with hir free wille / Thus she pleyeth
and thus she proeueth hir strengthes / And sheweth a grete wondyr
to alle hir seruauntes yif þat a whiht is seyn weleful / And ouer-
throwe in an houre

¶ The secunde prose [*margin, leaf 37*]

16 **C**Ertes .I. wolde pleten with the a fewe thynges vsinge the
wordys of fortune / tak hede now thy self / yif þat she axeth
1 Ryht/ /O thow man werfore makes thow me gylty by
thyne euery dayes playnynges / what wronge haue .I. don
20 the // what goodes haue .I. byreft the þat weeren thyne/ /Stryf or
pleten wyt me by-forn what Iuge þat thow wolt of the possessyoun
of Rychesses or of dignitees/ /And yif thow mayst shewyn me / þat
euere any mortal man hath resseyuyd any of tho thynges to ben his
24 in propre / than wol .I. graunte frely þat alle thykke thynges weeren
thyne / whiche that thow axest / wan þat nature browht the forth
owt of thi modyr wombe / .I. resseyuyd the naked *and* nedy of alle
thynges / *and* .I. noryssede the with my Rychesses *and* was redy *and*
28 ententyf thorw my fauor to susteyne the / And þat makeþ the now
inpacyent ayeins me/ /And .I. enuyrounde the with alle the Aboun-
daunce *and* shyninge of alle goodes þat ben in my ryht / now it
lyketh me to withdrawen myn hand // thow hast had grace as he þat

¹ leaf 37, back.

used of foreyne goodes / thow hast no ryht to pleyne the as thowgh
 thow haddyst outrelly for-lorn alle thi thinges // whey pleynesthew
 thanne / .I. haue don the no wrong / Rychesses honours and swyche
 other thinges ben of my ryht / My seruautus knowen me for hyr 4
 lady / they comyn with me and departen wan .I. wende .I. dar wel
 affermen hardly þat yif tho thinges of whiche thow pleyneest þat
 thow hast forlorn hadde ben thyne / thow ne haddyst nat lorn hem /
 / .I. shal thanne oonly ben deffendyd to vsen my Ryht / Certes 8
 it ys leueful to the heuene to make cleere dayes / and after þat to
 coeueryn the same dayes with dirk nyhtes // the yer hath ek leue to
 apayrelyn the visage of the erthe now with flowres and now with
 frut / and to confownden hem som tyme with reynes and with coldes / 12
 /The see hath ek his ryht to ben som tyme kalm and blawndyssynge
 with smothe water and som tyme to ben horrible with wawes and
 tempestes / But the couetyse of men þat may nat ben stanchid /
 shal it bynde me to ben stidefast / syn þat stidefastnesse is vnkowth 16
 to my maneres / swych is my strengthe and this pley .I. pleye con-
 tinuely / .I. torne the whirlynge wheel with the tornynge cerle /
 .I. am glad to chaungyn¹ the lowest to the heyest / And the heyist to
 the lowest // Worth vp yif thow wolt so it be by this lawe / that 20
 thow ne holde nat þat .I. do the wronge / thogh thow dessende
 adoun wan the resoun of my pley axeth it / wistesthow nat how
 cressus the kyng of lydyens of whiche kyng Cyrus was ful sore agast /
 a lytul by-forn þat this rewlyche cressus was kawth of Cyrus and 24
 lad to the fyr to ben brent / but þat a rayn dessendede down fro
 heuene þat rescowede hym / And is yt owt of thi mynde / how þat
 pawlus consul of Rome / wan he hadde takyn þe kyng of percyens /
 weep pitowsly / for the kapteuite of the self kyng // what other 28
 thinge by-waylen the cryenges of tragedyes / but oonly the dedes of
 fortune / þat with a vnwarstroke ouertorneth realmes of grete noblye /
 /Glose / Tragedye is to seyn / a dite of a prosperite for a tyme
 þat endith in wrecchyddnesse // lernedest nat thow in greke wan thow 32
 weere yonge / þat in the entre or in the celere of Iubyter ther ben
 towched two tonnes þat on is ful of good þat oother is ful of harm /

¹ leaf 38.

/what ryht hasthow to pleyne / yif thow hast takyn more plente-
uosity of the goode syde þat is to seyn of my Rychesse*s and prosperite*s/
/And what ek yif .I. ne be nat' al departyd fro the // what ek yif
4 my mutabylyte yeueth the ryhtful cause of hope to han yit betere
thinges/ /Natheles dysmaye the nat' in thi thougth/ /And thou þat
art put in the comune Realme of alle / ne desire nat to lyuen by thin
oonly propre ryht

the secunde metur [*margin, leaf 38, back*]

8 **T**Howgh plente þat is Goddesse of Rychesses hielde a-down
with ful horn / And withdraweth nat hir hand / as many
Rychesses as the see torneth vpward sandes wan yt y
moeued with rauyssynge blastes / Or elles as many
12 rychesses as ther shynyn bryhte sterres in heuene on the sterry nyhtes /
yit for al þat mankynde nolde nat cese to wepe wrecchede plementes /
/And al be it so þat god resseyueth gladly hir preyres / and yeueth
hem as fool large meche gold / And Aparayleth coueytos men with
16 noble or cleere honours // yit semeth hem hauen .L.-getyn nothings
but alwey hir crewel rauyne deuowrynge al that thei han getyn /
sheweth oother gapynges / þat is to seyn / gapen and desyren yit
after mo rychesses / what bryddis myhtten wyt-holden to any cer-
20 teyn ende the desordene couetyse of men / wan euer the rather þat it
fleteth ¹In large yiftes / the more ay brenneth in Hem the thurst
of hauynge / Certes he þat quakyng and dredful weneth hym
seluen nedy / he ne leueth neuer more ryche

¶ The thrydde prose [*margin, leaf 40*]

24 **T**Her-for yif þat fortune spake with the for hir self in this
manere / forsothe thou ne haddyst nat / what thou myhtest
answere / And yif thou hast Any thinge / wher-with thou
mayst ryht fully defendyn thy compleynt / it by-houeth
28 the to shewyn yt / And .I. wol yeuyn the spase to tellyn it / Cer-
teinly *quod* .I. thanne / thise bet fayre thinges / And enoynted with
hony swetenesse of Rethorike and Musyke / And onoly whil thei ben
herd / they ben dylysyos // but to wrechis is a deppere feelynge of

¹ leaf 39.

harm / this is to seyn / þat wrecches feelyn the harmes / that they
suffren more greuously / than the remedies or the delytes of thise
wordes mowen gladyn or comforten hem / So þat wan thise thinges
stynten forto sowne in eres / the ¹sorwe þat is inset¹ greueth the 4
thowght / Ryht so is it *quod* she / for thise ne ben yit none remedyes
of thi maledye / but they ben A manere noryssynges of thi sorwes
yit rebel ayein thi curacion // ffor wan þat tyme is / .I. shal moeue
swych thinges þat percen hem self depe / but¹ natheles þat thou 8
shalt nat wylne to leten thi self a wrecche // hasthow foryeten
the nowmbere and the manere of thi welefulnesse // I. hoolde me
style how þat the souerane men of the Cyte tokyn the in cure *and*
kepyng / wan thou weere orphelyn of fadyr *and* modyr / And 12
weere chosen in Affynite of prinses of the cyte / And thou be-
gunne rather to be leef *and* deere / than for to ben A neysshbour /
/ the whiche thing is the moost *presyous* kynde of any propinquite
or alyaunce þat may ben // who is it þat ne seyde tho þat thou 16
were ryht weleful / *with* so grete A nobleye of thi fadyris in lawe
and with the castete of thi wyf / And *with* the oportunitie *and*
noblesse of thi masculyn chyldren þat is to seyn / thi sones /
And ouer al this me lyst to passen the comune thinges / how thou 20
haddyst in thi yowthe dygnites / þat weren werned to oolde men //
but it delyteth me to comen now to the Syngler / vp-hepyng of thi
welefulnesse / yif any frute of mortal thinges may han any weyhte
or *pris* of welefulnesse / myhtesthow euer for-yetyn for any charge 24
of harm þat myhte befall / the remembraunce of thilke day / þat thou
saye thi two sones makyd *conseileres* / *and* .I.-lad togedere fro thin
hows vndur so gret A semble of senatoures *and* vndyr the blythenesse
of peeples / And whan thou saye hem set in the court in heere 28
chayeres of dygnitees / thou Rethoryen or pronouncere of kynges
preysynges desseruedyst glorie of wit *and* of Eloquence / wan thou
yttyng by-twye thy two sones conseylers in the place / þat hihte
irco / And fulfyldest the Abydyng of the multitude of poeple þat 32
was sprad a-bowten the *with* so large preysyng *and* laude / as men
syngen / in victories / tho yaue thou wordes to fortune as .I. trowe /

¹ leaf 40, back.

chaungynges/ /wolphow thanne trusten in the towmblynge for-
tunes of men // wolthow trowen on flettynge goodes / is it certeyn *and*
establyssed by lawe perdurable þat nothings þat is engendred nys
stedefast ne estable

4

¶ The ferthe prose [*margin, leaf 44*]

THan seyde .I. thus / O norice of alle vertuus thow seyst ful
soth // Ne .I. ne may nat for-sake the ryht swyfte cours of
my prosperite // þat is to seyn þat prosperite ne be comen
to me wondyr swyfly *and* sone // but this is thinge þat 8
gretely smerteth me / whan yt remenbryth me // ffor in alle *Aduersyte*
of fortune the mooste vnzely kynde ¹of *contrarios* fortune is to han
ben weleful / But þat thow *quod* she abyest thus the tormentus² of thi
false opynion / þat maysthow nat ryhfully blamen ne Aretten to 12
things / as who seyh / ffor thow hast yit many habūdaunce of
things/ /*Texte* // ffor al be yt so þat the ydel name of auenturos
welefulnesse moeueþ the now / it ys leefful þat thow rekne *with*
me of how manye grete things thow hast yit plente / And therfor 16
yif þat thilke thinge / þat thow haddest for moost presyous in
al thi rychesse of fortune / be kept to the yit by the grace of
god vnwemmed *and* vndefowled / maysthow thanne pleyne ryhtfully
vp-on the meschef of fortune / syn thow hast yit thy beste things/ 20
/Certes yit leueth in good poynt thilke presious honour of man-
kynde / Symacus thi wyues fadyr / which þat is a man maked alle
of sapyence *and* vertu / the wyche man thow woldest byen Redely /
with the pris of thin owne lyf // he be-wayleth the-wronges þat men 24
don to the / *and* nat for hym self for he leueth in sykernesse of any
sentences put ayeins hym/ /And yit lyuyth thy wyf þat is a-tempre
of wyt *and* passynghe oother wymmen in clenness of chastete/ /And
for .I. wol closen shortely hyr bowntes / she is lik to hir fadyr / .I. 28
telle the wel þat she lyueth loth of this lyf / And keepith to the
oonly hir goost / And is al maad *and* ouerkomen by wepynghe *and*
sorwe for desyr of the / in the weche thinge oonly .I. moot graunten
þat thi welefulness is amenysed // what shal .I. seyn ek of thi two 32

¹ leaf 44, back.

² MS. torment₃, as phebe₃ for phebus. But 3 = also z and gh.

sones conseylours of whiche as of chyldren of hir age ther shyneth
 the lykenesse of the wyt of hir fadyr or of hir eldyr fadyr // And
 syn the soueryn cure of alle mortel folk/ is to sauen hir owen lyues/
 4 /O how weleful arthow yif thow knowe thy goodes / for yit ben
 ther thinges dwellyd to the ward / *pat* no man dowlth than they ne
 ben more dereworthe to the / than thin owen lyf/ /And for thy/
 drye thy teeres for yit nis nat euerych fortune al hateful to the ward /
 8 ne ouer gret tempest hath nat yit fallen vpon the // wan *pat* thyn
 aneres cleuen faste / *pat* neyther wolen suffren the counfort of this
 tyme present / ne the hope of tyme comynge to passen ne to faylen
¹And .I. preye *quod* .I. *pat* faste moten they halden / for whyles that
 12 they halden / how so euer *pat* thinges ben / .I. shal wel fleetyng forth
 and escapyn / but thow mayste wel sen how grete Aparayles and aray
pat me lakketh *pat* ben passed away fro me/ /I. haue som what
 auauised and forthered the *quod* she / yif *pat* thow anoye nat or for-
 16 thinke nat of al thi fortune / As who seyth .I. haue som what confortd
 the so *pat* thow tempest the nat thus with al thi fortune syn thow hast
 yit thi beste thinges // but .I. may nat suffren thi delites / *pat* pleyne
 so wepyng and angwissos for *pat* ther lacketh som what to thi weleful-
 20 nesse/ /ffor what man is so sad or of so parfyt welefulnesse / *pat* he
 ne stryuyth and pleyne on som halue ayen þe qualite of his estat /
 for why / ful angwissos thing is the conlysyon of mannes goodes / for
 eyther it comth nat al to-gydere to a wyht / or ellis yt last nat perpe-
 24 tuel // ffor sum man hath grete Rycheses / but he is a-shamyd of his
 Vngentel lynage / And som ys renowned of noblesse of kynrede /
 but he is enclosed in so grete Angwysshe of nede of thinges / *pat* him
 weere leuere *pat* he weere vnknowe/ /And som man haboundith
 28 bothe in Rychesse and noblesse / but yit he bewayloth his caste lyf /
 for he ne hath no wyf / And som man is wel and zelyly ymared
 but he hat no chyldren / And noriseth hise Rycheses to the eyres of
 strange foolkys / And som man is gladyd with chyldren / but he
 32 weepeth ful sory for the trespass of his sone or of his dowgter/ /And
 for this þer ne acordyth no wyht lyhtly to the co[n]dycyon of his
 fortune // ffor alwey to euery man ther is in som what *pat* vn-assaied

a ne wot nat / or elles he dredith þat he hath asayed / And adde
 his also / þat euery weleful man hath a ful delycat feelynge / so that
 ut yif alle thinges byfalle at his owne wyl / for he inpacyent or is
 at vsed to han non Aduersyte / A-non he is throwen adoun / for 4
 iery lytul thinge / And ful lytul thinges ben tho / þat withdrawen
 ie somme or the perfeccyon of blysfulnesse fro hem þat ben moost
 rtunat // how many men trowesthow wolden demen hem self to ben
 moost in heuene / yif they myhten atayne to the leest party of the 8
 mnaunt of thi fortune / this same place þat thou clepyst exil / is
 ontre to hem þat enhabyten heere and forþi nothing wrecched but
 han thou weenest hyt / As ho seyth thou thy self ne no whyht elles
 is a wrechche / but whan he weneth hym self a wrechche by repu- 12
 asyn of his corage / And ayeinward / alle fortune is blysful to a
 an / by the egreablete or by the egalyte of hym þat suffreth hyt //
 hat man is þat / that is so weleful þat nolde changen his estat /
 hat he hath lost pacience // the swetnesse of mannes welefulnesse is 16
 prayngd with many beternesses / the weche welefulnesse al though
 seme swete and loyful to hem þat vseth hyt / yit may yt nat ben
 with-holden þat it ne goth away wan yt woole / Thanne is yt wel
 me / how wrecched is the blysfulnesse of mortal thinges / þat 20
 eyther yt dureth perpetuel with hem that euery fortune resseyuen
 greablely or egaly / ne it ne delyteth nat in al to hem þat ben
 ngwyssos / O ye mortal folk what seke 3e thanne blysfulnesse owt
 f yowre self / whiche þat is put in yowre self / Erroure and folye 24
 onfowndeth yow / .I. shal shewe the shortely the poynt of souereyne
 lysfulnesse / Is ther any thinge more preysous to the than thi self /
 now wolt Answer nay / Thanne yif hyt so be þat thou art myhty
 uer thi self / that is to seyn by tranquillite of thi sowle / than hast 28
 now thinge in thi power þat thou noldest neuer leesyn / ne fortune
 say nat be-neme it the / And þat thou mayst knowe þat blysefulnesse
 e may nat standen in thinges þat ben fortunous and temporel / now
 ndyrstonde and gadere yt to-gidere thus // yif blysfulnesse be the 32
 ouereyn good of nature þat lyueth by resoun / ne thilke thinge nis
 at souereyn good þat may be taken away in any wyse / for more

worthi thinge *and* more digne is thilke thinge þat may nat ben take
away // than sheweth yt wel þat the vnstabilnesse of fortune may
nat atayne to reseyuen verray blysfulnesse / And yit more ouer. /
4 what man that this towmblynge welefulnesse ledith / eyther he woot
þat it is chaungeable / or elles he woot hyt nat / And yif he ¹wot it
nat / what blysful fortune may ther ben in the blyndnesse of ignor-
ance/ /And yif he wot þat it ys chaungeable / he moot alwey ben
8 adrad þat he ne lese þat thinge þat he ne dowteth nat but þat he may
leesyn hyt / As who seyth he mot ben alway agast list he leese þat
he wot wel he may leese it // for which the continuel drede þat he
hath ne suffreth hym nat to ben weleful / Or yif he leese it / he
12 weneth to be dyspysed *and* forletyn/ /Certes ek þat is a ful lytal
good þat is born *with* euene herte whan yt is lost / þat is to seyn þat
men do no more fors of the lost than of the hauynge / And for as
meche as thow þi self art he to whom yt hath ben shewed *and* proued
16 by ful manye demonstracyouns as .I. wot wel / þat the sowles of men
ne mowe nat deyen in no wise / And ek syn yt is cleer and carteyn /
þat fortunous welefulnesse endith by the deth of the body / yt may
nat ben dowted / þat yif þat deth may take a-way blysfulnesse þat
20 alle the kynde of mortal thinges ne dessendeth in to wrecchednesse /
by the ende of the deth/ /And syn we knowen wel þat many a man
hath sowht the frut of blysfulnesse nat oonly *with* suffrynge of deth//
but ek *with* suffrynge of peynes and tormentes/ /How myhte
24 thanne this present lyf maken men blysful / syn þat whan thilke
selue lyf is ended yt ne maketh folkes no wrecches /

¶ The ferthe metur [*margin, leaf 46, back*]

28 **W**Hat maner man stable And waar / þat wole fowndyn
hym a perdurable sete / And ne wole nat ben cast
down *with* the lowde blastes of the wynd eurus /
And wole despyce the see manasyng *with* floodes //
lat hym eschewen to bylde on the cop of the Mountaygne / or in the
moyste sandes / for the felle wynd auster tormenteth the cop² of the
32 montaygne / *with* alle hise strengthes / And the lavse sandes refusen
to beren the heuy wyhte/ /And forthi ȝif thow wolt flee the

¹ leaf 46.

² ? MS may be top.

lous auenture / þat is to seyn of the worlde / haue mynde
ynely to fychchen thin hows of a merye site in A lowh stoon //
al though the wynde trowblynge the see / thondre with ouer-
wynges/ /thow that art put in quiete and weleful by strengthe 4
ai palys shalt leden ¹A cler age / Scornynge the woodnesses And
res of the Eyr //

¶ The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 49, back*]

BVt for as moche as the noryssinges of my resouns dessenden
now in to the / .I. trowe it weere tyme to vsen a lytel 8
strengere medycynes/ /Now vndyrstond heere al weere yt
so þat the yiftes of fortune ne weere nat brutel ne transi-
/ what is ther in hem þat may ben thyn in any tyme // or
þat yt nis fowl / yif þat it be consyderyd and lokyd perfytly // 12
nessis ben they presyous by the nature of hem self / or elles by
nature of the/ /What is most worth of rychesses is nat gold / or
t of moneye assembled/ /Certes thilke gold and thilke moneye
eth and yeueth betere renoun to hem þat despendyn it / thanne 16
ilke folk' þat mokeren it // ffor auarice maketh alwey mokereres
en hated/ /And largesse maketh folk cler of renoun // ffor syn
wich thinge as is transferred fram o man to a nother ne may nat
lyn with no man/ /Certes thanne is thilke moneye precyous 20
n it is translated in to oother folkes² and stenteth to ben had / by
e of large yeuyng of hym þat hath yeuyn it/ /And also yif al
moneye that is ouer al in the worlde / weere gaderyd toward o
/ it sholde makyn alle oother men to ben ³nedy as of þat // 24
certes a voys þat is to seyn with-owte amenusynge fulfyllith
rdere the heerynge of moche folk' // but certes yowre rychesses ne
ren nat passen in to moche folk' ³with owte amenusynge And
n they ben apassed / nedes they makyn hem poore þat for-gon 28
rychesses/ /O streyte and nedy clepe .I. this rychesse / syn þat
y folk' ne may nat han yt' al / ne al may it nat' comyn to o man /
townten pouerte of alle other folk' / And the shynynge of gemmes
.I. clepe presyous stoones drawith it nat' the eyen of folk to hem 32

¹ leaf 47.

² or folke.

³ leaf 50.

ward / þat is to seyn for the beautes // but certes yif ther weere
 beaute or bounte in the shynynge of stones / thilke clernesse is of
 the stones hem self / and nat of men/ /for which .I. wondre gretely
 4 þat men meruaylen on swyche thynges / for why / what thing is y^t
 þat yif yt wanteth moeuynge and Ioyngture of sowle and body / þat
 by ryht myht semen a fayr creature to hym þat hath a sowle of
 resoun // ffor al be it so þat gemmes drawn to hem self a lytel of
 8 the last beaute of the world / thorw the entente of hir creatour /
 thorw the distinccon of hem self / yit for as mochel as they ben put
 vndyr yowre excellense / they ne han nat desseruyd by no wey þat
 ye sholden mervaylen on hem/ /And the beaute of feldes delyteth yt
 12 nat mochel vn to yow / Boece / why sholde it nat delyten vs / syn
 þat it ys a ryht fayr porsyon of þ^e ryhte fayre werke þat is to seyn
 of this world/ /And ryht so ben we gladed som tyme of the face of
 the see whan yt is cler / And also merueylen we on the heuene /
 16 and on the sterres / And on the sonne and on the Moone / phyl-
 sophie/ /Aperteneth quod she any of thilke thynges to the / why
 darsthow gloryfyen the in the shynynge of any swyche thynges //
 Arthow distingwed and embelysed by the spryngynge flowres of the
 20 fyrst somer sesoun // or swellyth thy plente in the frutes of somer/
 / whi arthow rauyssed with ydel Ioyes / whi enbracest thow
 straunge goedes as they weeren thyne // fortune ne shal neuer
 makyn þat swyche thynges ben thyne þat nature of thynges hath
 24 maked foreyne fro the/ /Soth is þat with-owten dowte / the frutes
 of the Erthe owen to ben to the noryssynge of bestys/ /And yif þou
 wolt fulfyllen thy nede after þat yt suffiseth to nature / than is yt no
 nede þat thow seke after the superflwite ¹Of fortune/ /ffor with ful
 28 fewe thynges And with ful lytel thynges nature halt hir apayed /
 And yif þou wolt achoken the fulfyllynge of nature with super-
 flwites Certes thilke thynges þat þou wolt thresten or powren in to
 nature shollen ben vnIoyful to the or elles anoyos // wenest thow ek
 32 þat yt be a fayre thing to shyne with diuerse clothinge / of which
 klothinge yif the beaute be agreable to loken vp-on / .I. wol
 mervaylen on the nature of the matere of thilke klotches / or elles on

¹ leaf 50, back.

the werkman þat wrowht hem/ /But also a longe Rowte of meyne /
makyth þat a blysfyl man / þ^e whiche *seruantus*² / yif they ben
visyous of condiciouns it is a gret charge *and* a distrucsyon to the
hows / And a gret enemy to the lord hym self/ /And yif they ben 4
goode men / how shal straunge or foreyne goodnesse ben put in þ^e
nowmbre of thi Rychesse/ /So þat by alle thyse forseide pinges it is
clearly .I. shewyd þat neuer oon of thilke thinges þat thow acount-
edest for thine goodes nas nat thi good / In the wyche thinges yif 8
ther be no beaute to ben desyred / why sholdesthow ben sory yif
thow leese hem / or why sholdesthow reioysen the to holden hem /
ffor yif they ben fayre of hyr owne kynde / what aperteneth that to
the / for al so wel sholden they han ben fayre by hem selue / 12
though they weeryn departed fram alle thyne rychesses // ffor why
fayre ne presyous ne weeren they nat for þat they comen amonge thy
Rychesses // but for they semeden fayre *and* presyous / ther-for thow
haddyst leuere rekne hem amonges thy Rychesses/ /But what 16
desires thow of fortune with so grete a noyse / *and* with so gret
a fare/ /I. trowe thow seke to dryue a-wey nede with habund-
aunce of thinges / but certes it torneth to yow al in the contrarye
ffor why certes it nedeth of ful manye helpynges to kepyn the 20
diuersyte of presyos *ostelementus*/ /And soth it is þat of manye
thinges / han they nede þat many thinges han/ /And ayeinward of
lytul nedeth hem þat mesuren hir fille after the nede of kynde / *and*
nat after the owtrage of coueytyse / Is it thanne so / þat ye men ne 24
han no propyr goode / I-set in yow // ffor whiche ye mcten sekyn
owtward yowre goodis in foreyne *and* subgyt thinges / So is thanne
the condysyn of thinges torned vp so down / þat a man þat is
a deuine ²beest by meryte of his resoun / thinketh þat hym self nis 28
neyther fayre ne noble / but yif yt be thorw possessyon of *ostel-*
mentus þat ne han no sowles // And certes al oother thinges ben
apayed of hir owne beautes / But ye men þat ben semblable to God /
by yowre resonable thought desyren to a-payrelen yowre excellent 32
kynde of the lowest thinges // Ne ye vnderstondyn nat how gret a

¹ MS *seruant*; : 3 is sometimes z initial and me lial (p. 34) as well as *us* and
gh final.

² leaf 51.

wrong¹ ye don to yowre creatour / for he wolde þat mankynde were
 most worthy *and* noble of any oothre wordly thinges/ /And ye
 threste adown yowre dignitees by-nethe the lowest thinges/ /for yif
 4 þat al þ^e good of euery thinge / be more presyos than ys thilke
 thinge whos þat the good ys / syn ye demen þat tho fowlest thinges
 ben yowre goodys // thanne submitten ye *and* putten yowre seluen
 vndyr the fowleste thinges by yowre estimacion/ /And certes this
 8 tydeth nat¹ *with*-owte yowre desertes / for certes swyche is the condy-
 syon¹ of alle man kynde / þat oonly whan yt hath knowynge of it selue/
 than passeth it in noblesse alle oother thinges/ /And whan yt for-
 leteth þ^e knowynge of it self / than is it¹ browht by-nethen alle beestys
 12 // for why al oother leuyng bestys han of kynde to knowe nat¹ hym-
 self // but whan men letyn the knowynge of hem-self yt comth hem
 of vice // but how brode shewyth the erroure And the folye of yow
 men / þat wenen þat any thinge may ben aparaylyd with straunge
 16 aparaylementus // but for sothe þat may nat ben doon/ /For yif a wyht
 shyneth *with* thinges þat ben put to hym / as thus / yif thilke
 thinges schynen *with* which a man is aparayled / certes thilke
 thinges ben comendyd *and* preysed *with* whyche he is aparayld //
 20 but natheles the thinge þat is coueryd *and* wrappyd vndyr þat
 dwelleth in his felthe/ /And .I. denye þat thilke thinge be good þat
 anoyeth hym þat hath it/ /Gabbe .I. of this / thow wolt seye nay //
 Certes Rychesses han a-noyed ful ofte hem that han tho Rychesses //
 24 syn þat euery wyckyd shrewe / and for hys wyckednesse the more gredy
 Aftyr oother folkes Rychesses / wer so euer it be in any place / be it
 gold or presyous stones/ /And wenyth hym only most worthi þat
 hat hem // thow thanne þat so bysy dredist¹ now the swerd *and*
 28 the spere // yif thow haddyst entred in the paath ¹of this lyf a
 voyde wayferynge man / þan woldyst thow synge by-forn the thef /
 as who seyth a pore man þat berth no Rychesse on hym / by the
 weye / may boldely synge by-forn theues / for he hath nat¹ werof to
 32 ben robbed / O precyos And ryht cler is the blysfulnesse of mortal
 rychesses / þat whan thow hast getyn yt¹ / than hast thow lorn thi
 sikernesse

¹ leaf 51, back.

¶ The fyfthe metur [*margin, leaf 52*]

Blysful was the fyrst age of men // they heldyn hem apayed
/ *with* the metes þat the trewe feeldes browhten forth //
they ne dystroyede nor desseyuyd nat hem self *with*
owtrage // they weeren wont lythly to slakyn hyr hungyr 4
at euen *with* accornes of Okes/ /they ne cowde nat medly the yifte
of bachus to the cleer hony / þat is to seyn they cowde make no
pymment nor clarree / ne they cowde nat medle the bryhte fleeces of
the contre of Seryens / *with* the venym of tyrye // this is to 8
seyn they cowde nat deyn white fleeces of syryen contre *with* the
blood of a manere shylyfyssh / þat men fynden in tyrye / *with*
whiche blood men deyn purpyr/ /they slepin holsom slepys
vp on the gras/ /And dronkyn of the rennyng wateres/ /And 12
layen vndyr the shadwes of the heye pyn trees/ /Ne no gest
ne straungere ne karue yit the heye see *with* coores / or *with*
shippes // Ne they ne hadde seyn yit none newe strondes to leden
marchaundyse ¹In-to diuerse contres/ /Tho weeryn þ^e crwel 16
claryouns ful hust *and* ful stylye // ne blod I-shad by egre hate ne
hadde nat deyed yit armures / for werto / or whych wodnesse of
enemys wolde fyrst moeuen armes / whan they say crwel woundes ne
none meedes be of blod .I.-shad/ /.I. wolde þat owre tymes sholde 20
torne ayein to þ^e olde maneres // but þ^e angwissos loue of hauynge
brenneth in folk moore crwely than þ^e fyr of mowntaigne ethna /
þat ay brenneth/ /Allas what was he þat fyrst dalf vp the gobetes
or the weyhtes of gold couered vndyr erthe / And the presios stoones 24
þat woldyn han be hydd // he dalf vp presios perils / þat is to seyn
þat he þat hem fyrst vp dalf / dalf vp a presios peril / for whi for
the preciosnesse of swych thinge hath many man be in peril

¹ leaf 52, back.

Chawcer vp on this fyfte metur of the second book¹

- A** Blysful lyf a paisyble *and* a swete [The Former Age]
 ledde the poeples in the former age
 They helde hem paied of the fructes þat þey ete
 4 whiche þat the feldes yaued hem by vsage
 They ne weere nat forpampred with owtrage
 Onknowyn was þe quyerne *and* ek the melle
 They eten mast hawes *and* swych pownage
 8 And dronken water of the colde welle
- ¶ yit nas the grownd nat wounnded with þe plowh
 but corn vp sprong vnsowe of mannes hond
 þe which they gnodded *and* eete nat half .I.-nowh
 12 ne man yit knewe the forwes of his lond
 no man the fyr owt of the flynt yit fonde
 Vn-koruen *and* vn-grobbed lay the vynyng
 no man yit in the mortar spices grond
 16 to clarre ne to sawse of galentyne
- ¶ no Madyr welde or wode no litestere
 ne knewh / the fles was of is former hewe
 no flessch ne wiste offence of egge or spere
 20 no coyn ne knewh man which is fals or trewe
 no ship yit karf the waves grene *and* blewe
 no Marchaunt yit ne fette owt-landissh ware
 no batails trompes for the werres folk ne knewe
 24 ne towres heye *and* walles rownde or square
- ¶ what sholde it han awayled to werreye
 ther lay no profyt ther was no rychesse
 But corsed was the tyme .I. dar wel seye [leaf 53]
 28 þat men fyrst dede hir swety bysynesse
 to grobbe vp metal lurkyng in dirkenesse
and in þe Ryueris fyrst gemmys sowhte

¹ Though this *Former Age* and the *Fortune* that follows have been printed before in our *Parallel Text*, I give 'em again here, to show how they turn-up in the *Boece*.

n sprong' vp al the cursydnesse
yse þat fyrst owr sorwe browhte (32)

grauntus put hem gladly nat in pres
wyldnesse ne no busshes for to wynne
erte is as seith diogenes
tayle ek is so skars *and* thinne (36)

ut mast or apples is ther-Inne
bagges ben *and* fat vitaille
ir ost the Cyte for to a-sayle
they gon *and* spare for no synne (40)

no paleis chaumbres ne non halles
and wodes softe *and* swete
his blyssed folk' *with*-owte walles
leues in perfyt Ioye reste *and* quiete (44)
of fetheres ne no bleched shete
to hem but in surte they slepte
weere al on *with*-owte galles
f hem his feith to oother kepte (48)

ed was the hawberke *and* the plate
sh poeple voyded of alle vyse
o fantesye to debate
of hem wolde oother wel cheryce (52)
non enuye non Auaryce
no taylage by no tyranye
and pes good feith the emperice
. *no gap in MS.*] (56)

nat Iuppiter the lykerous
was fadyr of delicacie
his world ne nembrot desyrous
ad nat maad his towres hye (60)
now may wepe And crye
re dayes nis but couetyse
se *and* tresoun *and* enuye
ad manslawhter *and* mordre in sondry wyse (64)

Causar / Balades de vilage sanz peinture

¶ This wrecched worlde is transmutacion
as wele / or wo / now poeere *and* now honour
with-owten ordyr or wis descresyon)

- 4 gouerned is by fortunes errour
but natheles the lakke of hyr fauowr'
ne may nat don me syngen thowh .I. deye
Iay tout perdu moun temps *et* moun labour
8 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

[leaf 53, back]

- ¶ yit is me left the lyht of my resoun
to knowen frend fro foe in thi merowre
So mochel hath yit thy whirlynge vp *and* down
12 I-tawht me for to knowe in an howre
but trewely no fors of thi reddowre
to hym þat ouer hym self hath the maystrye
My suffysaunce shal be my socoure

- 16 ffor fynaly fortune .I. thee deffye
¶ O Socrates þou stidfast chaumpyon
she neuer myht be thi tormentowr'
thow neuer dreeddest hyr oppressyoun

- 20 ne in hyr chere fownde thow no sauoure
thow knewe wel the deseyte of hyr coloure
And þat hire most worshiþe is to lye
I knew hir' ek a fals dissimuloure

- 24 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

Le responce de fortune a pleintif

¶ No man ys wrechchyd but hym self yt wene
and he þat hath hym self hat suffisaunce
whi seysthow thanne y am the so kene

- 28 þat hast thy self owt of my gouernaunce
sey thus graunt mercy of thyn haboundaunce
that thou hast lent or this why wolt þou stryue
what woost thou yit how y the wol anaunce
32 *and* ek thou hast thy beste frende a lyue

I haue the tawht deuision by-twene (33)

rend of effect *and* frende of cowntenaunce

ne nedeth nat the galle of no hyene

at cureth eyen derkyd for penaunce (36)

ow seist thou cleer *pat* weere in ignoraunce

it halt thin ancre *and* yit thou mayst aryue

her bownte berth the keye of my substaunce

nd ek *pou* hast thy beste frende alyue (40)

[how manye haue .I. refused to sustigne

yn .I. the fostred haue in thy plesaunce

withow thanne make a statute on *þy* quyene

at .I. shal ben ay at thy ordynaunce (44)

how born art in my regne of varyaunce

bowte the wheel *with* oother most thou dryue

fy loore is bet than wikke is thi greuaunce

nd ek *pou* hast thy beste frende a lyue (48)

Reposounce du pleintif cointre fortune.

[Thy loore y dempne / it is aduersyte [leaf 54]

fy frend maysthow nat reuen blynde goddessse

at .I. thy frendes knowe .I. thanke to the

lak hem agayn / lat hem go lye on presse (52)

he negardye in kepyng hyr rychesse

monostik is thou wolt hire towre asayle

rikke appetyt comth ay before sykenesse

a general this rewle may nat fayle (56)

Reposounce de fortune cointre le pleintif

[Thow pynchest at my mutabylyte

or .I. the lente a drope of my rychesse

and now me lykyth to *with-drawe* me

thi sholdysthow my realte *apresse* (60)

ne see may ebbe *and* flowen moore or lesse

ne welkne hath myht to shyne reyne or hayle

ryht so mot .I. kythen my bruteinesse
in general this rewle may nat fayle (64)

Le pleintif

¶ Lo excussyon of the maieste
4 þat al purueyeth of his ryhtwysnesse
that same thinge fortune clepyn ye
ye blynde beestys ful of lewednesse (68)
the heuene hath proprete of sykyrnesse
8 this world hath euer resteles trauayle
thy laste daye is ende of myn interse
in general this rewele may nat fayle (72)

Lenuoy de fortune

¶ Prynsey .I. preye yow of yowre gentileesses
12 Lat nat this man on me thus crye and pleyne
And .I. shal quyte yow yowre bysynesse
at my requeste as thre of yow or tweyne (76)
þat but yow lest releue hym of hys peyne
16 preyeth hys best frend of his noblesse
That to som betere estat he may attayne

The sixte prose [*margin, leaf 56*]

20 **B**ut what shal .I. seye of dignites *and* of powers / the
whiche ye men þat neyther knowen verray dignite / ne
verray power / areysen hem as heye as the heuene / the
whiche dignites *and* powers yif they comen to any wykkyd
man they don as grete damages *and* destrucciouns / as doth the
flaumbe of the mountaigne ethna / whan the flawmbe walweth vp /
24 ne no deluge¹ ne doth so crwel harmes / Certes the remenbryth wel
as .I. trowe þat thikke dignite þat men clepyn the Inperye of
consulers / the whych þat whilom was bygnnyng of fredom /
yowre eldres coueiteden to han don a-way þat dignite for the pride
28 of the consulers / And ryht for the same pride / yowre Eldres
byforn þat tyme hadden don a-vey owt of the cyte of Rome

¹ *gloss*: .i. diluuium.

the kynges name // þat is to seyn they nolde han no lenger no
kyng // but now yif so be / þat dignites *and* powers ben yeuen to
goode men the which / thing is ful zelde/ /what agreable thinges is
ther in tho dignites or powers / but onely the goodnesse of foolkys / 4
þat vsen hem/ /And therfor it is thus / þat honour ne comth nat
to vertu / for cause of dignite / but ayeinward honour comth to
dignite for cause of vertu // but which is thilke yowre ¹dereworthe
power þat is so cleer *and* so requerable / O / ye erthelyche bestys 8
considere ye nat ouer which thinge þat it semeth þat ye han power/
/now yif thow saye a mous amonges oother musus þat chalengede
to hym self ward ryht *and* power ouer alle oother mysus // how gret
scorn woldisthow han of hit // glosa/ /So farith yt by men the 12
body hath power ouer the body // ffor yif thow looke wel vp on the
body of a wyht / what thinge shalthow fynde moore freele than is
man kynde / the whiche men wel ofte ben slayn with bytynge of
smale flies / or elles with the entrynge of crepynge wormes in to the 16
priuetes of mannes body/./but wher shal men fynden any man þat
may excercen or haunten any ryht vp on a noþer man / but onely
on hys body or elles vp on thinges þat ben lowere than the body //
the which .I. clepe fortunows possessyouns/ /Maysthow euer haue 20
any comaundement ouer a fre corage²/ /Maysthow remwen fro the
estat of his propre reste / a thowht that is clyuynge to-gidere in hym
self by stidefast resoun // as whylom a tyraunt wende to confownde
a fre man of corage / *and* wende to constreyne hym by torment to 24
maken hym discoueren *and* acusen folk þat wysten of a coniuracion
which .I. clepe a confederacie þat was cast ayeins this tyraunt/ /but
this fre man boot of his owne tonge *and* cast it in the visage of
thilke woode tyraunt // so þat the tormentus þat this tyraunt wende 28
to han makend matere of crwelte this wiseman makyd it makyd it
matere of vertu/ /but what thing is it þat a man may don to a
nother man / þat he ne may resseyuen the same thinge of oothre folkes
in hym self / or thus what may a man don to folk þat folkes ne may 32
don hym the same/ /I. haue herd told of busirides þat was wont to
alen hise gestys / þat herberweden in his hows / *and* he was sleyn

¹ leaf 56, back.² gloss : quoa. dicit. non.

hym self of ercules þat was his gest // Regulus hadde takyn in
 batayle many men of affryke *and* cast hem in to feteres/ /but sone
 after he moste yeue hys handes to ben bownde *with* the cheynes of
 4 hem þat hadde whylom ouercomen // weenesthow thanne þat he be
 myhty that hath no power to don a thinge þat oothre ne may don in
 hym / þat he doth in oothre / And yit moore ouer yif it so weere
 þat these dignites or poweres hadden any propre or natural goodness
 8 in hem self / neuer nolden they 'comyn to shrewes/ /For contraryous
 thinges ne ben nat' wont' to ben Ifelawshipped to-gidere/ /Nature
 refuseth þat contrarious thinges ben .I.-ioigned / *and* so as .I.
 am in certein þat ryht wykkyd folk han dignites ofte tyme / than
 12 sheweth it wel þat dignites *and* powers ne ben nat goode of hire
 owne kynde // syn þat they suffren hem self to cleuen or Ioynen
 hem to shrewes/ /And certes the same thinge may moost digneliche
 Iugen *and* seyn of alle the yiftes of fortune / þat moost plenteuously
 16 comyn to shrewes / of þ^e which yiftes .I. trowe þat yt owhte ben
 consideryd / þat no man dowlth þat he nis strong' in whom he seth
 strengthe // *and* in whom þat swyftnesse is/ /soth is that he swyft' //
 Also Musike maketh Musiciens / *and* phisike maketh phisiciens /
 20 *and* rethoryk rethoryens // ffor whi the nature of euery thing
 maketh his proprete/ /ne it nis nat entremedled / *with* the effect of
 the contraryous thinges / And as of wil it chaseth owt thinges þat
 to it ben contrarye // but certes Rychesse may nat' restreyne Auarice
 24 vnstaunched/ /ne power ne makyth nat' a man myhty ouer hym
 self / whiche þat visyous lustys holden destreynd *with* cheynes þat
 ne mowen nat be vnbownden/ /And dignites þat ben yeuen to
 shrewede folkes nat oonli ne makyth hem nat digne / but it sheweth
 28 rather al opynly þat they ben vnworthi *and* vndigne/ /And why is
 it thus / Certes for ye han Ioye to clepyn thinges *with* false names
 þat beren hem alle in þ^e contrarye // the which names ben ful ofte
 reproued by the effecte of the same thinges/ /So that these ilke
 32 rychesse ne owhten nat by ryht' to ben clepyd rychesse / ne swich
 power ne owhte nat ben clepyd power / ne swich dignite ne owht nat'
 ben clepyd dignite // And at the laste .I. may conclude the same

hing / of alle the yiftes of fortune / in which þer nis nothinge to
 en desired / ne þat hath in hym self naturel bownte / as it is
 il wel .I.-seene / ffor neyther they ne Ioignen hem nat alwey to
 oode men / ne makyn hem alwey goode to whom they ben .I.- 4
 signed // verbi gratia /

¶ The sixte Metur [*margin, leaf 57, back*]

WE han wel knowen how many grete harmes *and*
 destrucsyons weren don by the emperour nero // he
 let brenne the Cyte of Rome *and* made slen the 8
 senatoures/ /And he crwel whilom slow his brother
nd he was makyd moyst *with* the blood of his modyr / þat is to
 syn he lette slen *and* slitten the body of his modyr / to sen wher he
 was consequed / *and* he lookyd on euery halue vp on hyr colde dede 12
 ody / ne no teere ne wette¹ his face/ /but he was so hard hertyd /
 at he myhte ben domes man or Iuge of hyr dede beaute / *and*
 atheles yit gouernede this nero by ceptre alle the poeples that
 hebus the sonne may sen / Comynge fram hys owtereste arsyngne til 16
 e hide his bemes vndyr the wawes / þat is to seyn he gouernyd alle
 ie poeples by sceptre inperial þat the sonne goth a-bowte from est
 west² And ek this nero gouernyd by ceptre alle the poeples þat ben
 ndyr the colde sterres that hyhten vii tyryones / this to seyn he 20
 ouernede alle the poeples þat ben vndyr the party of the north /
nd ek nero gouernede alle þe poeples þat the vyolent wynd nothus
 orklith / *and* bakyth the brennyng¹ sandes by hys drye hete / þat
 is to seyn alle the poeples in the sowth/ /but yit ne myhte nat al 24
 is hye power torne the woodnesse of this wykkyd nero / Allas it is
 reuous fortune it is // as ofte as wykked swerd is ioyned to crwel
 enym / þat is to seyn venimos crwelte to lordshippe

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 60*]

THanne seyde .I. thus // thow wost wel thy self þat the 28
 coueytise of mortal thinges ne hadden neuer lordshipe of
 me/ /but .I. haue wel desyred matere of thinges / to done /
 as who seyth .I. desyre to han matere of gouernaunce ouer

¹ MS wecte.

² leaf 58.

comunalitees/ /ffor vertu stille ne sholde nat elden // þat is to seyn
þat list þat or he wax old / his vertu þat lay now ful styлле / ne sholde
nat perise vn-excercised in gouernaunce of comune / ffor which men
4 myhten spekyng or wryten of his goode gouernement // philosophie //
ffor sothe *quod* she *and* that is a thing þat may drawen to gouernaunce/
swiche hertes as ben worthi *and* noble of hir nature/ /but natheles it
may nat drawen ¹or tollen swiche hertes as ben .I.-browht to the fulle
8 perfeccyon of vertu // þat is to seyn coueytise of glorie *and* renoun
to han wel admynstryd the comune thinges or don gode desertes to
profyt of the comune/ /ffor se now *and* consydere how lytul *and* how
voyde of alle prys is thilke glorie/ /Certein thing is as thow hast
12 lerned by the demonstracyon astronomye // þat al the enuyronyng
of the erthe abowte ne halt but the resoun of a prikke at regard of the
gretnesse of heuene/ /þat is to seyn / þat yif ther weere makid
comparisoun of the erthe to the gretnesse of heuene / men woldyn
16 Iugen in al / þat the erthe ne helde no space/ /of the whyche litel /
region of this worlde / the ferthe partye ys enhabited with lyuynge
bestys þat we knowen / as thow hast thyself ylerned by tholome þat
proueth it/ /And yif thow haddest *with-drawn* / *and* abated in thy
20 thowht fro thilke ferthe partye as moche space as the see *and* the
mareys contenen and ouer-goon / *and* as moche spaces as the region of
drowhte ouerstrechcheth / þat is to seyn sandes *and* desertes // vel /
vnnethe sholde ther dwellyn a ryht streyt place to the habyta.
24 syoun of men / And ye thanne þat ben enuyroned *and* closed with-
in the leste prykke / of thilke prykke / thinken ye to manyfesten
yowre renoun *and* don yowre name to ben born forth // but yowre
glorie þat is so narwh and so streyte Ithrongen in to so lytul
28 bowndes/ /how mochel coueyteth yt in largesse *and* in gret dooinge
And also sette this ther to // þat many a nasyoun diuerse of tonge
a[n]d of maneres and ek of resoun of hir lyuynge ben enhabyted in
the clos of thilke lytul habytacule/ /to the whiche naciouns / what
32 for deficulte of weyes / and what for deficulte of langages / And
what defawte of vn-vsage *and* entrecomunynge of marchaundise /
nat only the names of syngler men ne may nat strecchen / but ek

¹ leaf 60, back.

² gloss: i. vix.

ume of cytes ne may nat strecchen // at the laste certes in the
of marchus tulius / as hym self writ in his book / þat the
1 of the comune of rome ne hadden nat passed ne clowmbyn
he Mountaigne þat hyhte caucasus/ /And yit was thikke tyme 4
a wel waxen / and gretly redowted of the parthes and ek of
folk¹ enhabybynge a-bowte // sestow nat thanne how streyt
ow compressed is thilke glorie / þat ye travaylen ¹A-bowte to
and to multiplie/ /May thanne the glorie of a singler romayne 8
chen thyder as the fame of the name of Rome may nat clymbyn
sen/ /And ek seyshow nat that the maneres of diuerse folk¹ and
lawes ben discordaunt among¹ hem self/ /So þat thilke thinge
m men Iugen worthy of preysynge / oother foolk¹ Iugen þat it 12
rthi of torment/ /And ther-of comth it þat thogh a man
hym in preysynge of his renoun / he may nat in no wyse
en forth ne spreden his name to many maner poeples // ther-
very manere man owhte to ben apayed of his glorie þat is 16
ssed among¹ his owne nesshebours/ /And thilke noble renoun
ben restreynyd with-in the bowndes of o manere folk¹ // but
many a man þat was ful noble in hys tyme / hath the
ched and nedy foryetinge of wryteres put owt of mynde and 20
wey / al be it so þat certes thilke wrytynges profyten lytul /
hyche wrytynges long¹ and derk elde doth a-wey / bothe hem
k hir actorros // but yow men semeth to geten yow a per-
lete whan ye thinken þat in tyme to comynge yowre fame shal 24
// but¹ natheles yif thow wolt maken comparysoun to the
s spaces of eternite / what thing hast thow by which thow
reioysen the of long¹ lastynge of thi name/ /ffor yif ther were
l comparyson of the a-bydyng of a moment to .x. thowsand 28
r/ /ffor as mochel as bothe the spaces ben ended / ffor yit
the moment som porsoun of it al though it lytul be / but
es thilke selue nowmbyr of yeres / and ek as many yeeres as
o may be multiplyed / ne may nat certes ben comparysoned to 32
rdurablyte þat is endeles / ffor of thinges þat han ende may be
l comparysoun / but of thinges that ben with-owtyn ende to

¹ leaf 61.

things þat han ende may be maked no comparysoun / and forthi is
 it / þat al thowgh renoun of as longe tyme / as euere the lyst to
 thinken / weere thowt to the regard of eternite þat is vnstaunchable
 4 and infynyt it ne sholde nat oonly semen lytel / but pleyntyche ryht
 nawht / but ye men certes ne konne don nothings a ryht / but
 yif yt be for the audience of poeple / and for idil rumours / And ye
 forsaken the grete worthinesse of concience and of vertu // and ye
 8 seken yowre gerdouns of the smale wordes of straunge folkes / haue
 now her and vndyrstonde / in the lyhtnesse of swych pride and
 veyne glorie / how a man scornede festyualy and meryly swych
 vanite // whilom þer was a man þat hadde assayed with stryuyng
 12 wordes a nother man / the which nat for vsage of verray vertu / but
 for prowde veyne glorie had taken vp on hym falsly the name of a
 philisophre / this rather man þat .I. spak of / thowhte he wolde assaye
 weere he thilke weere a philosophre or no / þat is to seyn yif þat he
 16 wolde han suffred lyhtly in pacience the wronges þat weeren don vn-
 to hym // this feynede philosophre took pacience a lytel whyle / and
 whan he hadde resseyuyd wordes of owtrage / he as in stryuyng
 ayein and reioisynge of hym self seyde at the laste ryht thus //
 20 vndyrstondow nat þat .I. am a philosophre / þat oother man
 answerde ayein ful bytyngly and seyde .I. hadde wel vndyrstondyn
 yt yif thou haddest holden thi tonge stille // but what is it² to thise
 noble worthi men / ffor certes of swyche folk / speke .I. / þat
 24 sekyn glorie with vertu / what is it quod she / what atteyneth
 fame to swyche folk / whan the body is resoluyd by the deth at
 the laste // ffor yif yt so be þat men dyen in al / þat is to seyn body
 and sowle / the whyche thing owre resoun deffendeth vs to by-
 28 leuen / thanne is ther no glorie in no wyse / for what sholde
 thilke glorie ben // whan he of whom thilke glorie is seyde to be nis
 ryht nawht in no wyse / And yif the sowle whyche þat hath in it
 self science of goode werkes / vnbownden fro the prison of the
 32 erthe³ wendeth frely to the heuene / despyseth it⁴ nat thanne alle
 erthely occupacion / and beinge in heuene reioiseth // þat it is

¹ leaf 61, back.

³ gloss: .i. corporis.

² gloss: .s. fama.

⁴ gloss: .i. anima.

exempt fro alle Erthely thinges / as who seith / thanne rekketh the
sowle of no glorye of renom of this world

[*The Seventh Metre (leaf 62)*]

Who so þat with ouerthrowynge thought oonly seketh
glorye of fame and wenith þat it be souereyn ¹Good // 4
Lat hym looken vp on the brode shewynge contreyes of heuene / and
vp on the streyte Cyte of this erthe / And he shal ben ashamyd of
the onces of his name þat may nat fulfyll the litel compas of þ^e
Erthe/ /O what coueyten prowde folk to lyften vp hir nekkes in 8
ydel in the dedly yok of this worlde/ /ffor al though þat renom
ysprad passynge to ferne poeples / goth by diuerse tonges // and al
though þat grete howses or kynredes shynen with cler titlys of
honours / yit natheles deth despyseth alle heye glorye of fame // 12
And deth wrappeth to-gydere the heye heuedes and the lowe / and
makith egal and euene the heyoste to the loweste // where wonen
now the bones of trewe fabrycius / what is now brutus / or stierne
catoun // the thynne fame yit lastynge of hir ydel names is marked 16
with a fewe letterys/ /but al though þat we han knowen the fayre
wordes of the fames of hem // it is nat yeuen to knowe hem þat ben
dede and consumpte/ /Liggeth² thanne stille al owtrely vnknowable //
ne fame ne maketh yow nat knowe/ /And yif ye weene to lyuen the 20
longere for wynde of yowre mortal name / whan o cruwel day shal
rauysshe yow thanne is the seconde deth dwellynge vn to yow //
Glose // the fyrst deth he clepith heere departynge of þ^e body and
the sowle/ /And the seconde deth he clepith as heere the stintynge 24
of the renom of fame

¶ The viij prose [*margin, leaf 63*]

BVt for as mochel as thou shalt nat wenen quod she þat I
bere vntretable batayle ayeins fortune // yit som tyme it by-
falleth þat she desseyuable desserueth to han ryht good 28
thank of men/ /and þat is whan she hire self opneth / and
whan she descouereth hir frownt / and sheweth ³hir maneres per

¹ leaf 62, back.

² gloss: .s. superbi.

³ leaf 63, back.

auntere yit vndirstondeſt how nat þat .I. ſhal ſeye // it is a
wondyr þat .I. deſyre to telle / and forþi vnnethe may .I.
vnpleyten my ſentence with wordes for .I. deme þat contraryes
4 fortune profiteth more to men than fortune debonayre/ /ffor al wey
whan fortune ſemeth debonayre than ſhe lyeth falſly in by-hetynge
the hope of welefulneſſe // but forſothe contraryes fortune is alwey
ſothfaſt / whan ſhe ſheweth hir ſelf vnſtable thorw hyr chaungynge/
8 / the amiable fortune deſſeyueth folk / the contrarye fortune
techeth/ /the amiable fortune byndeth with the beaute of falſe
goodys the hertes of folk þat vſen hem / the contrarye fortune
vnbyndeth hem ye þ^e knowynge of freele welefulneſſe/ /the
12 amiable fortune mayſt how ſen alwey wyndynge and flowynge / and
euere myſknowynge of hir ſelf // the contrarye fortune is a-tempre
and reſtreynyd and wys thorw exceſſe of hir aduerſyte/ /at the
laſte amiable fortune with hir flatterynges draweth myſ-wandrynges
16 men fro the ſouereyne good // the contraryes fortune ledith ofte
folk ayein to ſothfaſt goodes and haleth hem ayein as with an hooke/
weeneſt how thanne þat thow owhteſt to leten this a lytel thing /
þat this aſpre and horrible fortune hath diſcoueryd to the / the
20 thowhtes of thy trewe frendes/ /ffor why this ilke fortune hath
departyd and vncoueryd to the bothe the certeyn viſages and ek the
dowtos viſages of thy felawes/ /whan ſhe departyd away fro the /
ſhe took away hyr frendes and laſte the thyne frendes/ /now whan
24 thow were ryche and weleful as the ſemed / with how moche
woldeſt how han bowht the fulle knowynge of this // þat is to ſeyn
the knowynge of thy verray frendes/ /now pleyne the nat thanne
of Rycheſſe .I.-lorn / ſyn thow haſt fowndyn the moſte preſyos
28 kynde of Rycheſſes þat is to ſeyn thy verray frendes

¶ The viii Metur [margin, leaf 64, back]

32 **T**hat þ^e world with ſtable feith / varieth acordable chaung-
ynges // þat the contraryes qualite of elementus¹ holden
among hemſelf aliaunce perdurable / þat pheb¹us the ſonne
with his goldene chariet / bryngeth forth the roſene day /
þat the mone hath commaundement ouer the nyhtes/ /whiche

¹ MS element₃, pheb₃.

[METRE 8.] *Love is the bond between created things. Boece is* 49
 PROSE 1.] *comforted by Philosophy's words.*

esperus the eue sterre hat browt // þat þ^e se gredy to flowen
 neth *with* a certeyn ende hise floodes / So þat it is nat lueful
 che hise brode termes or bowndes vp on the erthes/ /þat is
 to couere alle the erthe / Al this a-cordaunce of thinges is 4
 with looue / þat gouerneth erthe *and* see / *and* hath¹ also
 adementus to the heuenes *and* yif this looue slakede the
 / alle thinges þat now louen hem to-gederes / wolden
 batayle contynuely / *and* stryuen to fordoon the fason of 8
 lde / the which they now leden in acordable feith by fayre
 ges/ /this looue halt to-gideres poeples Ioygned *with* an
 ond / *and* knytteth sacrament of maryages of chaste looues //
 ie enditeth lawes to trewe felawes/ /O weleful weere man- 12
 yif thilke loue þat gouerneth heuene gouerned yowre corages //

Explicit liber 2^{us} ./

[leaf 64, back.]

Incipit liber 3 ./

[BOOK III.]

¶ The fyrste prose [*margin, leaf 65, back*]

Y this she hadde endid hire songe / whan the swetnesse of
 hire ditee hadde thorw perced me þat was desirous of
 herkninge *and* .I. astoned hadde yit streyhte myn Eres / 16
 þat is to seyn to herkne the bet / what she wolde seye/ /So
 el here-after .I. seyde thus/ /O thow þat art souereyn comfort
 wissos corages / So thow hast remounted *and* norryshed me
 e weyhte of thy sentenses *and* *with* delit of thy syngynge // 20
 I. trowe nat now þat .I. be vnpanygal to the strokes of fortune /
 seyth .I. dar wel now suffren al the assautes of fortune *and*
 ffende me fro hyr/ /*and* tho remedies whyche þat thow
 hire byforn weren ryht sharpe Nat oonly þat .I. am nat 24
 of hem now // but .I. desiros of herynge axe gretely to

¹ *gloss*: .s. amor.

heeren the remedyes/ /than seyde she thus // þat feeled .I. ful wel
 quod she/ /whan þat thow ententyf and styлле rauysshedest my
 wordes/ /and .I. abood til þat thow haddest swych habyte of thy
 4 thought as thow hast now // or elles tyl þat .I. my self had makid
 to the the same habyt/ / which þat is a moore verray thing/ // And
 certes the remenaunt of thinges þat ben yit to seye / ben swyche/
 /þat fyrst whan men tasten hem they ben bytynge / but whan they
 8 ben resseyued with-inne a whyht than ben they swete/ /but for
 thow seyst þat thow art so desirous to herkne hem/ /wit how gret
 brennyng woldesthow glowen / yif thow wystest whyder .I. wol
 leden the/ /whydyre is þat quod .I./ /to thilke verray welefulnesse
 12 quod she/ /of whyche thyng herte dremeth // but for as moche as
 thy syhte is ocupied and distorbed / by Imagynasyon of herthely
 thynges / thow mayst nat yit sen thilke selue welefulnesse/ /do quod
 .I. and shewe me / what is thilke verray welefulnesse / .I. preye the
 16 with-howte tarynge/ /þat wole .I. gladly don quod she / for the cause
 of the/ /but .I. wol fyrst ¹marken the by-words and I wol enforcen
 me to en-formen the/ /thilke false cause of blysfulnesse þat thow
 more knowest / so þat whan thow hast fully by-holden thilke false
 20 goodes and turned thyne eyen to þat oother syde / thow mowe knowe
 the clernesse of verray blysfulnesse/ /

²the first metur [from margin]

24 **W**ho so wole sowe a reed and kerue a sonder with his
 delyuere it fro thornes / and / so þat þ^o korn may
 hook the bosses and the fern greynes/ /hony is the
 comen heuy of heres and of / þat ben wyckyd //
 more swete yif mowthes han fyrst tastyd sauoures / nothus leteth his
 the sterres shynen more agreably / whan the wynd / hath charyd
 28 plowngy blastes/ /and after þat lucifere the day ste / bene hors of the
 away the dirke nyht the day the fayrere ledith the / false goodes /
 sonne // And ²Ryht so thow by-holdyng fyrst the / affectyons/
 bygyn to with-drawn thy nekke fro the yok of Erthe / thy courage //
 32 /And after-ward the verre goodes shollen entren in to t

¹ leaf 66.

² leaf 66, back

¶ The 2^de prose / [leaf 68, margin]

THo fastnede she a lytul the syht of hir eyen *and with-drowh*
hire / ryht as it weere in to the streyte Cyte of hir thowht /
and bygan to speke ryht thus // alle the cures *quod* she ¹Of
mortal foolk / whiche þat trauaylen hem in many manere 4
studies / goon certes by diuerse weyes / /but natheles they enforseen
hem alle to comyn oonly to oon ende of blysfulnesse // And blysful-
nesse is swyche a good / þat who so þat hath gotten it / he ne may
ouer that no thing moore desyre / *and* this thing is forsothe þ^a 8
souereyn good / þat conteyneth in hym self alle manere goodes / /to
þ^a whyche good yif ther faylyde any thing / it myhte nat ben clepyd
souereyn good / /for thanne weere ther som good owt of this ilke
souereyn good þat myhte ben desyred / now is it clere *and* certein 12
thanne þat blysfulnesse is a *perfy*t estat by the congregasyon of alle
goodes // the whyche blysfulnesse as I haue seyde alle mortal foolk
enforseen hem to gotten by dyuerse wyse / /for why the coueytise of
verray good is naturelly yplaunted in the hertes of men / /but the 16
mys-wandrynge error mys-ledeth hem in to false goodes / /of the
whyche men / som of hem wenyn þat souereyn good be to lyuen
with owte nede of any thing / *and* trauaylen hem to be haboundaunt
of Rychesses / *and* som oother men demen þat souereyn good ben / 20
for to ben ryht digne of reuerence / *and* enforcen hem to ben reuer-
enced a-mong hyr nesshebors / by the honours þat they han ygeten /
and some folk ther ben þat holden þat ryht heyh power be souereyn
good *and* enforcen hem for to regnen or elles to Ioignen hem to hem 24
þat regnen // *and* it semeth to some oother foolk / þat noblesse of
renon be the souereyn good / *and* hasten hem to gotten gloryos name /
by the artz of werre *and* of pees // *and* many folk mesuren *and*
gessen þat souereyn good by Ioye *and* gladnesse / *and* wenen þat it be 28
ryht blysful thyng / to plowngen hem in voluptuos delit / /*and* ther
ben folk þat entrechaungenthe causes *and* the endes of thyse forseyde
goodes / As they þat desyren rychesses to han power *and* delytes //
Or elles they desyren power for to han moneye or for cause of renon / 32
/In these thynges *and* in swyche oother thynges is tordned alle the

¹ leaf 68, back.

entencion of desyrynges *and* of werkes of men / as thus / noblesse
and fauore of poeple / whyche þat yeueth to men as it semeth hem
 amanere clernesse of renon // *and* wyf *and* chyl dren þat men desyren
 4 for cause of delit *and* of merynesse // but forsothe ¹ frendes ne sholden
 nat ben rekned a-mong tho godes of fortune / but of vertu / for yt
 ys a ful hooly manere thyng / alle thise oothre thinges forsothe ben
 takyn for cause of power / or elles for cause of delit / Certes now am
 8 I redy to referren the goodes of the body to thise forseide thinges
 abouen / ffor yt semeth þat strengthe *and* gretnesse of body yeuen
 power *and* worthynesse / *and* þat beaute *and* swiftnesse yeuen
 noblesses *and* glorie of renon / *and* hele of body semeth yeuen delit
 12 / In alle thise thinges it semyth oonly þat blysfulnesse is desired /
 ffor why thilke thing þat euery man desyareth most / ouer alle thinges /
 he demeth þat yt be the souereyn good but .I. haue deffyned þat
 blysfulnesse is the souereyn good / ffor whych euery whyht demeth
 16 that thilke estat þat he desyareth ouer alle thinges þat it be blysful-
 nesse / Now hast thou thanne byforn thy eyen / almeist al the
 purposed forme of the welefulnesse of man-kyngde / þat is to seyn /
 Rychesses / honours / power / *and* glorie / *and* delitz / the whiche delit
 20 oonly consyderede Epicurus // And Iuged *and* establyssed þat delit is
 the souereyn good / ffor as moche al alle oothre thinges as hym
 thowhte by-refte away Ioye *and* myrthe fram the herte / but I retorne
 ayein to the studies of men / of whiche men / the corage alwey
 24 reherseth *and* seketh the souereyn good / al be it so / þat it be with
 a dirkyd memorye / but he not by whiche paath / Ryht as a drunken
 man not nat by whiche paath he may retorne hym to hys hows /
 semeth it thanne þat folk foleyn *and* erren / þat enforcen hem to
 28 haue nede of nothyng // Certes ther nis non oother thyng þat may so
 wel performe blysfulnesse / as an estat plentyuous of alle goodes / þat
 ne hath nede of non oother thing / but þat it is suffysaunt of
 hymself / vnto hym self / And foleyn swyche folk thanne þat
 32 wenen þat / that thilke thing þat is ryht good / þat it be ek ryht
 worthy of honour *and* of Reuerence / certes nay // ffor that thing
 nys neyther fowl / ne worthy to ben despised þat welneyh / all

the entencyon of mortal foolk trauaylen for to geten yt/ /and
 owere owhte nat þat ek / to ben rekened amonges goodes/ /what
 les / ffor it is nat to wene þat thilke thyng þat is most worthy of
 le thinges be feble *and with-owte strengthe* // And cleernesse of 4
 ynoun owhte þat to ben despised/ /¹Certes ther may no man for-
 ke þat alle thyng þat is ryht excellent *and noble* þat yt ne semeth
 ben ryht cleer *and renomd.* // ffor certes it nedith nat to seye þat
 ysfulnesse be Angwyssos ne drery ne subgyd to greuances ne to 8
 rres/ /syn þat in ryht lytel thynges folk seken to haue *and to*
 en þat may delyten hem / Certes thise ben the thinges þat men
 olen *and desyren to geten* / /And for this cause desyren they /
 ychesses dignites / regnes / glorie / *and delices* / ffor therby wenen 12
 ey to han suffysaunse / honour / power / renoun / *and gladnesse* /
 han is yt good / þat men seken thus by so many diuerse studijs/
 n whiche desyr it may lyhtly ben shewyd / how gret is the strengthe
 nature / for how so þat men han diuerse sentences *and discordynge* / 16
 Allegates men acordyn alle in louynge the ende of good / /

¶ The 2^de Metur [leaf 70, back, margin]

IT liketh me to shewe by subtyl song / *with slakke and*
 delitable son of strenges / how þat nature myhty enclyneth
and flitteth the gouvernementz of thinges / *and by whyche* 20
 lawes she purueyable kepith the grete world / *and how she*
 syndynge restreyneth alle thynges by a bonde þat may nat ben
 mbownde / /Al be it so þat the lyouns of the contre of pene / beren
 the fayre chaynes / *and taken metes of the handes of folk* þat yeuen 24
 it hem / *and dredyn hyr sturdy maystres* / of whiche they ben wont
 to suffren betinges / /yif þat hyr horyble mowthes ben by-bled þat
 is to seyn of bestys deuowred / hyr corage of tyme passed þat hath
 ben ydel *and rested repeyareth ayein* / /And they roren greuously / 28
and remembryn on hyr nature / *and slaken hyr nekkes fram hyr*
 chaynes vnbownde // And hyr mayster fyrst to-torn *with blody toth* /
 assayeth the wode wrathes of hem // this to seyn / they fretyn
 yr mayster / /And the Iangelynge bryd þat syngeth on the heye 32
 branches / þat is to seyn in the wode / *and after is enclosed in a*

¹ leaf 69, back.

streight cage/ /Al thowh þat the pleynynge bysynesse of men yeueth
hem honyede drynkes / and large metes with swete studye/ yit
natheles yif thylke bryd skyppeynge owt of hyr streyte cage / æth
4 the agreables shadewes of the wodes / she defowlyth with hyr feet
hyr metes I-shad / and seketh mowrnynge oonly the wode/ /and
twiterith desyrynge the wode with hyr swete voys/ /the yerde of
atre þat is haled a-down by myhty strengthe bowith redyly the crop
8 adown/ /but yif þat the hand of hym þat yt bent lat it goon ayein /
Anon the crop loketh vp ryht to heuene/ /the sonne phebz þat
falleth at euen in the westrene wawes / retorneth ayein est sonas /
hys carte by pryue paath there as it is wont aryse/ /Alle thinges
12 seken ayein to hyr propre cours / and alle thinges reioysen hem of
hyr retornynge ayein to hyr nature // Ne non ordynaunce nis by-
taken to thinges / but þat / that hath Ioyned the endynge to the
bygynnyng/ /And hat¹ maketh the cours of it self stable / þat it
16 ² chaungeth nat from hys propre kynde

¶ The 3^d prose [leaf 72, margin]

Certes also ye men þat ben Erthelythe beestes dremen alwey
yowre bygynnyng / Al though it be with a thynne Imagyn-
acyon / and by a manere thought // al be it nat clerly / ne
20 perfytyly / ye loken fram a fer to thylke verray fyn of blys-
fulnesse // and therfore naturel en³entencyon ledith yow to thylke
verray good/ /but many manere errours mys-torneth yow therfro/
/considere now yif that by thylke thinges by whiche a man weneth to
24 geten hym blysfulnesse / yif þat he may comyn to thylke ende þat
he weneth to come by nature/ /ffor yif þat moneye or honours / or
thyse oother forseide thinges / bryngen to men swych a thyng / þat
no good ne fayle hem / ne semeth fayle/ /Certes than wole .I. graunte
28 þat they ben maketh blysful by thylke thinges þat they han geten /
/but yif so be þat thylke thynges ne mowen nat performen þat
they by-heten / and þat ther be defaute of manye goodes/ /sheweth
it nat thanne clerly þat false beaute of blysfulnesse / is knowen
32 and ataynt in thylke thynges/ /ffyrst and forward / thow they
self þat haddest habundaunces of Rychesses nat long agoon . I.

¹ gloss: .s. ordo.

² leaf 71.

³ leaf 72, back.

axe yif þat in the habundaunce of alle thylke Rychesses / thow were
neuer angwissos or sory in thy corage of any wrong or greunaunce þat
by-tydde the on any syde/ /Certes quod .I. it ne remenbryth me nat
þat euere I was so free of my thowht þat .I. ne was alwey in 4
angwyssh of som what/ /And was nat þat quod she for þat the
lacked som what / þat thow noldest nat han lacked/ /Or elles thow
haddest þat thow noldest nat han had/ /ryht so is it quod .I. //
thanne desiredyst thow the presence of þat oon / and the absence of 8
þat oother / .I. graunte wel quod .I. // fforsothe quod she than nedeth
ther som what þat euery man desireth/ /ye ther nedeth quod I /
Certes quod she and he þat hath lacke or nede of awht nis nat in
euery wey suffysaunte to hym self / no quod I. // And thow quod 12
she in al the plente of thy Rychesses haddest thilke lakke of suffys-
aunse // what elles quod .I. / thanne may nat Rychesses makyn þat a
man nis nedy / ne þat he be suffisaunt to hym self / and þat was it
þat they by-hyhten as it semeth/ /And ek certes .I. trowe þat thys 16
be gretly to consydere / þat moneye ne hath nat in hys owne kynde /
þat it ne may ben by-nomen of hem þat han it / Mawgre hem/ /.I.
hy-knowe it wel quod .I./ /why sholdesthow nat by-knownen it
quod she / whan euery day the strengere folk by-nemyn it fro the 20
febelere / Mawgre hem/ /ffor whennes comyn elles alle thyse foreyne
compleyntes or quereles of pletynges / but for þat men axen ayeyn
here ¹Moneye þat hath ben by-nomen by force or by gyle and alwey
mawgre hem // ryht so is it quod .I. // than quod she hath a man 24
nede to seken hym foreyne help by wyche he may deffende hys
moneye/ /who may sey nay quod .I./ /Certes quod she and hym
nedede non help / yif he ne hadde no moneye þat he myhte leese/
/þat is dowtales quod .I. // than is this thing torned in to the con- 28
trarye quod she / ffor Rychesses þat men wenen sholde make suffis-
aunce / they makyn a man rather han nede of foreyne help/ /whyche
is the manere or the gyse quod she þat Rychesse may dryue away nede
Ryche folk may they neyther han hungyr ne thurst // thyse Ryche 32
men may the fele no coold on hyr lymes on wyntur/ /but thow wolt
Answeren / þat Ryche men han y-now / wher-with they may staunchen

¹ leaf 73.

hyr hongyr / slaken here thurst *and* don a-wey coold/ /In thys wyse
 may nede be counforted by Rychesses // but certes nede ne may al
 vtrelly ben don a-wey // ffor thowgh / this nede þat is alwey gapynge
 4 *and* gredy be fulfyd with Rychesses *and* axe any thyng / yit dwelleth
 thanne A nede þat myhte be fulfyd/ /.I. holde me styлле *and* telle
 nat how þat lytel thyng suffiseth to nature // but certes to Aueryce
 ynowh ne suffiseth no thing/ /ffor syn þat Rychesse ne may nat al
 8 doon alwey nede / but Rychesses maken nede / what may it thanne
 be / þat ye wenen þat Rychesses mowen yeuen yow suffisaunce

¶ The 3.^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 73]

12 **A**L weere it so þat A Ryche coueytos man hadde a Ryuer
 fletynge al of gold / yit sholde it neuer staunchyn hys
 coueytise // And thow he hadde hys nekke ychargyd
 'with presios stones of the Rede see / *and* thow he do
 Ere hys feeldes plentyuos with An hundred oxen/ /neuer ne shal hys
 bytynge bysynesse for-leten hym whyl he leuith / ne the lyhte
 16 Rychesses ne shol nat beryn hym compaignie / whan he is ded //

¶ The 4^{the} prose [Leaf 73, back, margin]

20 **B**Vt dignitees to whom they ben comyn maken they hym
 honorable¹ *and* reuerent² han they nat so gret strengthe / þat
 they may putte vertuus in the hertes of folk³ þat vsen the
 lordshippys of hem/ /Or elles may they don a-wey the
 vyces/ /Certes they ne be nat wont to don away wykkydnesse/ /but
 they ben wont rather shewen wykkydnesse/ *and* ther-of comth it
 þat .I. haue ryht gret⁴ desdaign / þat dignitees ben yeuen ofte to
 24 wykkyd men/ /ffor which thyng Catullus clepyd a consul of Rome/
 þat hyhte nomyus postum or boch/ /as who seyht he clepyd hym a
 congregasyn⁵ of vyces in hys brest as a postum is ful of corupsyn//
 Al were this nomyus set in chayre of dignite/ /Sesthow nat
 28 thanne how gret⁶ fylonye dignitees don to wykkyd men/ /Certes
 vnworthynesse of wykkyd men sholde be the lasse I-sene / yif they
 nere renommed of none honours/ /Certes thow thyself ne myhtest nat
 ben browht with as manye perils as þou myhtest suffren þat thow

¹ gloss: ironice.

² leaf 75.

woldest beren the magestrat *with* decorat / þat is to seyn / þat for no
peril þat myhte befallen the / by offense of the kyng theodoryke /
thow noldest nat be felawe in gouernaunce *with* decorat / whan þou
saye þat he hadde wykkyd corage of a lykores shrewe *and* of an 4
acusor/ /ne .I. ne may nat for swyche honours Iugen hem worthy of
Reuerence þat .I. deme *and* holde vnworthy to han thylke same
honours/ /now yif thow saye a man þat were fulfild of wysdom /
Certes thow ne myhtest nat deme þat he were vnworthy to the 8
honour Or elles to the wysdom of which he is fulfyld // No quod .I./
/Certes dignitees apertienen proprely to vertu *and* vertu transporteth
dignite anon to thilke man to whych she hyr self is conioigned. //
And for as moche as honours of poeple ne may nat maken folk digne 12
of honour / it is wel seyn clerly / þat they ne han¹ no propre beaute
of dignite // And yit men owhten taken mor heed in thys / ffor yif
so be þat a wykkyd whyght be so mochel the fowlere *and* the moore
owt cast / þat he is despised of most folk / so as dignete ne may nat 16
maken shrewes digne of Reuerence / the whych shrewes dignete
sheweth to moche foolk/ /thanne makith dignete shrewes rather so
mochel more despised than preysed/ /*and* forsothe nat vnpunissed /
þat is for to seyn þat shrewes reuengen hem ayeinward vp on dig- 20
netees / ffor they yilden ayein to dignetes as gret gerdoun whan they
by-spetten *and* defowlen dignetes *with* hyr vylenie/ /*and* for as
mochel as thow mowe knowe þat thilke verray reuerence ne may nat
comen by thyse shadwyte transitorye dignitees vndyrstond now thus / 24
yif that a man hadde vsed *and* had many maner dignitees of consules/
/and weere comyn per Auenture amonges straunge nasyons / sholde
thilke honour maken hym worshipful / *and* redowted of straunge foolk/
/Certes yif þat honour of poeple / weere a naturel yift to dignites / 28
it ne myhte neuer cesen now² Amonges no manere foolk to don hys
offyce / ryht as fyre in euery contre ne stynteth nat to eschaufen *and*
to ben hoot / but for as mochel as for to ben holden honourable or
reuerent ne comyth nat to foolk of hyr propre strengthe of nature / 32
but onoly of þe false opynion of foolk þat is to seyn wenen þat
dignitees maken foolk digne of honour / Anon therefore whan þat

¹ gloss: .s. honours.

² leaf 75, back.

they comyn there as folk ne knowen nat thylke dignitees / hyr
honours vanesshen away *and* þat anon / /but þat is amonges straunge
folk maysthow seyn / ne amonges hem ther they weeren born ne
4 duren nat thylke dignitees alwey // Certes the dignite of the prouost-
trye of Rome was whylom a gret power / now is it nothyng but An
Idel name *and* the rente of Senatorye a gret charge / /And yif a
whyht whylom hadde the office to taken heede to the vytayles of the
8 poeple / as of corn *and* oother thynges he was holden amonges grette /
/but what thyng is now more owt cast than thylke prouosttrye /
and as .I. haue seyde a lytel her-by-forþ þat thylke thyng þat hath no
propre beaute of hym self resseyueth som tyme prys *and* shynynge
12 *and* som tyme lesyth it / by the opynion of vsaunces / now yif þat
dignitees thanne ne mowen nat makyn foolk digne of Reuerence *and*
yif þat dignitees wexen fowle of hyr wylle by the felthe of shrewes/
and yif dignitees lesyn hyr shynynge by chaungynge of tymes/
16 /And yif they wexen fowle by estymacyon of poeple / /what is it þat
they han in hem self of beaute þat owhte ben desyred / as who seyth
non / thanne ne mowen they yeuen no beaute of dignete to non oother

¶ The 4th Metur [leaf 76, margin]

20 **A**L be it so þat the prwde nero with alle hys woode luxurie /
kembde hym / *and* a-paraylede hym with fayre purpres
of tyrye *and* with whyte perles / /Algates yit throf he
hateful to alle foolk / this is to seyn þat al was he be-
hated of alle folk / /yit this wycked nero hadde gret lorshippe / *and*
24 yaf whylom to the reuerenc; senatours the vnworshipful setes of dig-
nitoes // vnworshipful setes he clepyth heere / for þat nero þat was
so wykkyd yaf the dignetes / /who so wolde thanne resonably wenen
þat blysfulnesse were in swyche honours / as ben yeuen by vysyos
28 shrewes . . .

¶ The 5th prose [leaf 77, margin]

32 **B**Vt Regnes *and* famyliarites of kynges May they maken a man
to ben myhty // how elles / whan hyr blysfulnesse dureth
perpetually / /but certes the olde age of tyme passed *and* ek
of present tyme now is ful ensaunpyles how þat kynges
ben chaunged in to wrechchednesse owt of hyr welofulnesse / /O a

noble thing¹ and a clear thyng is power / þat is nat fownden myhty
to kepen it self // and yif þat power of Reaumes be auctor *and*
makere of blysfulnesse / yif thylke power lacketh on any syde /
Amen sith it nat thilke blysfulnesse *and* bryngeth in wrechednesse/ 4
/but yit al be it so þat the Reaumes of mankynde strechchen brode/
yit mot ther node ben moche foolk / ouer whyche þat euery kyng
ne hath no lorshipe ne comaundement // And certes vp on thilke side
þat power fayleth whych þat maketh foolk blysful/ ryht on þat 8
same side none power entreth vndyr-nethe þat maketh hem wreches/
in this manere thanne / moten kynges han more porsyoun of wrech-
chednesse than of welefulnesse/ A tyraunt þat was kyng of sysile/
þat hadde assayed the peril of hys estat/ shewede by symylytude 12
the dredes of Reaumes by gastnesse of a swerd þat heng ouer the
heued of hys famyler // what thyng ¹is thanne this power / þat may
nat doon away the bytynges of bysynesse / ne eschue the prikkes of
drede/ and certes yit wolden they² lyuen in sikernesse / but they 16
may nat / and yif they gloryfye hem in hyr power/ holdest thou
thanne þat thylke man be myhty / þat thou seyst þat he wolde don
þat he may nat doon/ and holdest þou thanne hym a myhty man
þat hat enuyrownde hyse sydes with men of armes or seriauntz / and 20
dredith more hem þat he maketh agast than they dredin hym / and
þat is put in þ^e handes of hise seruauntz / for he sholde seme myhty/
/but of famylieres or seruauntz of kynges what sholde .I. telle the
any thing / syn þat .I. my self haue shewyd the / þat Reames hem 24
self ben ful of gret feblesse / the whyche famylieres certes the Ryal
power of kynges in hool estat and in estat abated ful ofte throweth
adown/ Nero constreynede Senek hyr famyler and hys mayster to
cheesen on what deth he wolde deyen/ Antonius comaundede þat 28
knyhtes slowen / with hyr swerdes papynian hys famyler/ which
papynian þat hadde ben longe tyme ful myhty amonges hem of the
court/ and yit certes they wolden bothe han renounced hyr power /
of whyche two // senecke enforcede hym to yeuen to Nero hyse 32
Rychesses / and also to han goon in to solutarye exil // but whan the
grete weyhte / þat is to seyn of lordes power or of fortune drawith

¹ leaf 77, back.

² gloss: .s. tyrans.

60 *Friends that Fortune brings are Faithless. The true Conqueror* [BOOK III.
conquers himself. *Glory is deceitful.* [PROSE 5, 6, METRE 5.

hem þat sholen fallo / neyther of hem ne myhte do þat he wolde/
/what thing is thanne thylke power / þat thowgh men han it / yit
they ben agast/ /and whanne thow woldest han it thow nart nat
4 siker / and yif thow woldest forleten it thow mayst nat eschuen it/
/but wheyther swyche men ben frendes at nede / as ben conseyled
by fortune and nat by vertu // Certes swyche foolk as weleful fortune
maketh freendes / Contraryos fortune makyth hem enemys // And
8 what pestylence is moore myhty for to a-noye a wyht than a famylier
enemy // ./:

¶ The 5.th Metur [Leaf 78, margin]

12 **W** Ho so wole be myhty he mot daunten hys crwel corage/
/ ne putte nat hys nekke ouercomen vndyr the fowle
reynes of lecherye/ /ffor al be it so þat thy lordshype
strechche so fer / thath the contre of ynde quakyth at
thy comaundementz or at thy lawes / and þat the last Ile in þe see
þat hyhte tyle / be thral to the / yit yif thow mayst nat putten a-wey
16 thy fowle dyrke desyrs / and dryuen owt fro the wrechched com-
playntes/ /Certes it nis no powere þat thow hast. /

¶ The 6.th prose [leaf 79, margin]

20 **B** Vt glorie how deceyuable and how fowl is it ofte/ /ffor
whych thyng nat vnskyfully a tragedyen / þat is to seyn a
makere of ditees þat hyhten tragedies / cryde and seyde /
O glorie // Glorie quod she // thow nart nothyng elles / to
thowsandes of foolkes/ /but a gret sweller of Eres / for manye han
had ful gret renoun / by the false opynion of þe poeple and what
24 thyng may ben thowht fowlere thanne swyche preysynge/ /ffor
thylke foolk þat ben preysyd falsly / they moten nedes han shame of
hyr preysynges//And yif þat foolk han geten hem thonk of preysynge
by hyr desertes / what thyng hath thylke prys eched or encreased to
28 þe consience of wyse folkk // þat Mesuren hyr good / nat by the
Rumor of the poeple / but by the sothfastnesse of concience/ /and
yif it seme a fayr thyng a man to han encreased and spred his name /
than folwith it / þat it is demed to ben a fowl thing/ /yif it ne be
32 Isprad and encreased / but as .I. seyde a lytul her-by-for / þat syn

ther mot nedes ben many folk / to whyche folk the renon of a man
 ne may nat comen / it be-falleth þat he þat thow wenest be glorios
 and renomd / semeth in the nexte partye of the Erthes to ben /
 with-owte glorye and with-owhte renon / And Certes amonges thyse 4
 thynges .I. ne trowe nat þat the prys and grace of the poeple / nis
 neyther worthy to ben Remembred / ne cometh of wyse Iugement Ne
 is ferme perdurably / but now of thys name of gentellesse / what
 man is it þat ne may wel sen how veyn and how flyttinge a thyng it 8
 is // ffor yif the name of gentellesse be refferred to renoun and
 clernesse of lynage / thanne is gentyl name but a foreyne thyng /
 þat is to seyn to hem that gloryfien hem of hyr lynage / ffor it
 semeth þat gentellesse be a manere preysynge þat comth of the 12
 deserte of auncestris // And yif preysynge makyth gentillesse / thanne
 moten they nedes be gentyl þat ben preysyd // ffor which thing it
 folueth / þat yif thow ne haue no gentellesse of thy self // þat is to
 seyn preys þat comth of thy deserte / floreyne gentylesse ne maketh 16
 the nat gentyl but certes yif ther be any good in gentylesse / .I.
 trowe it be al oonly thys / þat it semeth as þat a manere necessite be
 imposed to gentel men / for þat they ne sholden nat owtrayen / or
 forlyuen fro the vertuus of hyr noble kynrede 20

{The 6th. Metre, leaf 79, back}

AL the lynage of men þat ben in Erthe ben of semblable
 byrthe / On allone is fadyr of thynges / On allone
 mynystreth alle thinges / he yaf to þe sonne hyse beemes
 he yaf to the moene hyse hornes / he yaf the men to þe 24
 Erthe / he yaf the sterres to the heuene / he encloseth with men-
 brys the sowles þat comen fram hyse hys sete / thanne comyn alle
 mortal folk of noble sede / why noysen ye or bosten of yowre Eldres /
 ffor yif thow loke yowre bygynnyng And God yowre auctor and 28
 yowre makere thanne nis ther no forlyued wyht / but yif he norysse
 hys corage vn to vyces / and forlete his propre burthe //

¶ The 7th prose. [leaf 80]

BVt what shal .I. seye of delites of bodye / of whyche delices
the desyrynges ben ful of Angwyssh/ /And the fu[1]fyllinges
of hem ben ful of penaunce/ /how gret sykenesse *and* how
4 gret soruwes vn-sufferable ryht as a manere frut of wyckyd-
nesse/ /ben thilke delyces wont to bryngen to the bodyes of folk þat
vsen hem/ /Of whyche delytes I not what Ioye may ben had of hyr
moeuyng/ /but thys wot .I. wel þat who so euere wole remenbryn
8 hym ¹Of hyse luxures / he shal wel vndyrstonde þat the yssues² of
delices ben sorwful *and* sorye // And yif thylke delices mowen
makyn folk blysful / than by þe same cause moten thyse bestys ben
clepyd blysful of whyche bestys al the entencyon hasteth to fulfyll
12 hyr bodyly Iolyte / *and* the gladnesse of wyf *and* chyldreh weere an
honest thyng / but it hath ben seyde // þat it is ouer mochel ayeins
kynde / þat chyldren han ben fownden tormentours to hyr fadres .I.
nat how manye/ /Of whyche chyldren how bytynge is euere con-
16 dycion / it nedeth nat to tellen it the / þat hast or thys tyme assayed
it / *and* art yit now angwyssos/ /In thys approue .I. the sentence of
my dyssyple Eurydyppys That seyde þat he þat hath no chyldren ys
weleful by infortune /

¶ The .7.th Metur [leaf 80, back]

20 **E**Very delit hath this / þat it Anguisseth hem *with* prikkes
þat vsen it/ /it resembleth to thise flyenge flyes þat we
clepyn ben / þat after he hath shad hyse agreable honyes/
/he fleth away / *and* styngeth the hertes of hem þat ben
24 ysmyte *with* bytynge ouerlonge holdyng //

¶ The 8th prose [leaf 81, back]

NOw is it no dowte thanne þat thise weyes ne ben amanere
mysledynges to blysfulnesse/ /ne þat they ne mowe nat
ledyn folk thyder / as they by-heten to leden hem/ /but
28 *with* how grete harmes thise for-seyde weyes ben enlaced/
/I shal shewe the shortly/ /ffor why yif thow enforcest the to
asemble moneye / thow most by-reuen hym hys moneye þat hath it/

¹ leaf 80, back.

² gloss: .s. endes.

/and yif thou wolt shynen with dignitees thou most by-sechen
and supplien hem þat yeuen tho dignitees/ /and yif thou coueytyst
by honour to gon byforn oother folk / thou shal defowle thy-self
thorw humblesse of axynge / yif thou desyrest power/ /thou shalt 4
be a-wayte³ of thy subgit; anoyosly ben cast vndyr by many perylles //
Axesthow glorie // thou shalt ben so destrat by aspere thynges
þat thou shalt forgoon sykernesse And yif thou wolt leden thy lyf
in delices / euery wyht shal despisen the and foreteten the / as thou 8
that art thral to thing þat is ryht fowl and brwtel/ /þat is to seyn
seruaunt to thy body/ /now is it thanne wel seen / how lytel and
how brotel ¹possessyon they coueyten þat putten the goodes of the
body abouen hyr owne reson/ /for maysthow sormounten thyse 12
Olyfaunt; in gretnesse or weyhty of body Or maysthow ben strengere
than the bole / maysthow ben swyftere than the tygre / by-hold the
spaces and þe stablenesse / and the swyft¹ cours of the heuene/ /and
stynt som tyme to wondren on fowle thynges / the whych heuene 16
certes / nis nat rather for thyse thynges to ben wondred vp on / than
for the reson by wych it is gouerned // but the shynynge of thy
forme / þat is to seyn þe beaute of thy body/ /how swyfly passynge
is it / and how transytorye/ /Certes it is more flyttinge than the 20
mutabylyte of flowres of the somer seson/ /for so arystotele telleth/
þat yif þat men hadden eyen of a beest þat hyhte lynx/ /so þat the
lokynges of folk myhte percen thorw the thynges þat with-stondyn
yt / who so loked thanne in the entrayles of the body of Alcidiades/ 24
þat was ful fayre in superfyte with-owte / it sholde seme ryht fowl/
/And forthy yif thou semyst fayr / thy nature maketh nat þat /
but the deceyuable or the feblesse of the eyen þat loken/ /but preyse
the goodes of þe body as mochel as euer the lyst / So þat thou knowe 28
Algates þat what so it be þat is to seyn of godes of the body/
/whych þat thou wondrest vp on may ben destroyed or dyssolued / by
the hete of a feure of thre dayes/ /Of alle whyche forseyde thynges /
.I. may reducen this shortly in somme/ /that thyse wordly goodes / 32
whyche þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-heten / ne ne ben nat
perfyte by congregasyon of alle goodes / þat they ne ben nat weyes

ne pathes þat bryngen man to blysfulnesse / ne makyn men to ben
 blysful //

¶ The .8.th Metur [leaf 82, back]

- 4 **A** Llas whych folye *and* whych ygnoraunce mys ledeth
 wandrynge wrechches fro the paath of verray goode/
 /Certes ye ne seken no gold in grene trees/ /ne ye ne
 gaderen nat presyos stones / in the vynes / ne ye ne
 hyden nat yowre gynnes in the hye Mountaynes to kachche fyssh/
 8 of whyche ye may maken Ryche festes/ /And yif yow lyketh to
 honte to Rooes / ye ne gon nat to the foordes of the water / þat
 hyhte tyrene/ /And ouer this men knowen wel the brykes *and* the
 cauernes of the see .I.-hyd in floodes // *and* knowen ek whych water
 12 ys ¹most plentyuos of whyte perles / *and* knowen whych water
 habowndeth most of Rede purple / þat is to seyn of a manere shelle
 fysh / *with* whych men dyen purple // *and* knowen whych strondes
 habownden most *with* tendre fysshes or of sharpe fysshes that
 16 hyhten Echynns / but folk suffren hem self to ben so blynde / þat
 hem ne rechcheth nat to knowe weere thilke godes ben .I.-hydd/
 /whyche þat they coueyten/ /but plowngen hem in Erthe *and* seken
 there thylke good þat sormounteht þe heuene þat bereth the sterres/
 20 /what preyere may .I. maken þat be digne to the nice thowhtes of
 men/ /but .I. preye þat they coueyten Rychesse *and* honours / so
 þat whan they han geten tho false goodes *with* gret travayle / þat
 ther-by they mowe knowen the verray Goodes

¶ The 9th prose [leaf 85, back, margin]

- 24 **I** T suffiseth þat .I. haue shewyd hyder to // the forme of false
 welefulnesse/ /so þat yif thou loke now clerly / the ordyr
 of myn entencyon requireth / ffrom hennes forth to shewen
 the þe verray welefulnesse/ /ffor sothe *quod* .I. / I. se wel
 28 now þat suffysaunce may nat comen by Rychesses / ne power by
 Reames / ne Reuerence by dignitees / ne gentyllesse by glorye /
 ne Ioye by / delyces / *and* hathow wel knowen þe causes *quod* she
 why it is/ /Certes me semeth *quod* .I. þat .I. se hem ryht as thowgh

¹ leaf 83.

it were thorw a lytel klyfte / but me weere leuere knowen hem
 more opynly of the / Certes quod she the resoun is al redy // ffor
 thylke thing þat symply is o thing / with-owten any deusyyn //
 The errour and folye of mankynde / departeth and deuydeth it and 4
 mys-ledeth it and transporteth from verray and parfyt good / to
 goodes þat ben false and vnparfyt // but sey me this // wenesthow þat
 he þat hat nede of power / y^t hym ne lacketh no thing / nay quod
 .I. // Certes quod she thow seyst a ryht / ffor yif so be þat ther ys 8
 a thing / þat in any partye be feblere of power certes as in þat it
 mot nedes ben nedy of foreyne help / Ryht so is it quod .I. /
 Suffysaunce and power ben thanne of o kynde / so semeth it quod
 .I. / And demesthow quod she / þat a thing þat is of this manere / 12
 þat is to seyn suffysaunt and myhty / owhte ben despyced ¹Or elles
 þat it be ryht digne of Reuerence / abouen alle thinges / Certes quod
 .I. it nis no dowte / þat it is ryht worthy to ben reuerenced / Lat vs
 quod she adden thanne reuerence to suffysaunce and to power / so 16
 þat we demen þat thise thre thinges be al o thing // Certes quod .I.
 lat vs adden it / yif we wolen graunten the sothe / what demesthow
 thanne quod she // is þat a dyrk thing / and nat noble þat is suffisaunt
 reuerent and myhty / Or elles þat it is ryht noble / and ryht cler by 20
 celebretye of renon / Considere thanne quod she as we han graunted
 her-by-forn / þat he þat ne hath nede of no thing / and is most
 myhty and most digne of honour yif hym nedith any clernesse of
 renoun / whych clernesse he myhte nat graunten of hym self // So 24
 þat for lacke of thylke clernesse / he myhte seme the febelers on any
 side / or the more owt cast // Glose / this to seyn nay / ffor who so
 þat is suffysaunt myhty and reuerent / clernesse of renoun folweth
 of the forseyde thinges / he hath it al redy of hys suffysaunce // boece 28
 .I. may nat quod .I. / denye it / but I mot graunte as it is / þat this
 thing be ryht celebrable / by clernesse of renon and noblesse /
 thanne folwyth it quod she / þat we adden clernesse of renon to the
 thre forseyde thinges so þat ther ne be amonges hem no difference / 32
 /this a consequens quod .I. / this thing thanne quod she / þat ne hat
 nede of no foreyne thing / and þat may don alle thinges by hyse

¹ leaf 86.

strengthes / *and* þat is noble *and* honorable // nis nat that a mery
 thing *and* a Ioyful / boece // but whennes quod .I. þat any sorwe
 myhte comyn / to this thing þat is swyche // Certes .I. may nat
 4 thinke Philosophie / than moten we graunte quod se that this thing /
 be ful of gladnesse / yif the forseyde thinges ben sothe / *and*
 certes also mote we graunten þat suffysaunce / power / noblesse /
 Reuerence / *and* gladnesse ben only diuerse by names but hyr
 8 substaunce hath no diuersite // boece // it mot nedly ben so quod .I.
 // Philosophie / thilke thing thanne quod she / þat is oon *and*
 symple in hys nature / the wykkednesse of men departeth yt *and*
 deuydeth it // *and* whan they enforcen hem to geten partye of a
 12 thing / þat ne hath no part / they ne geten hem neyther thilke
 partye þat nis non // ne the thing all hool that ¹they ne desyre nat /
 boece // in whych manere quod .I. P[hilosophie] thilke man quod she
 þat secheth Rychesses to fien pouerte / he ne trauayleth hym nat for
 16 to gete power ffor he hath leuere ben dyrk *and* vyl // *and* ek with-
 draweth from hym self many naturel delices // ffor he nolde lese the
 moneye þat he hath asemblyd / but certes in this manere / he ne
 geteth hym nat suffisaunce / þat power forleteth / *and* þat moleste
 20 prykketh // *and* þat fylthe maketh owt cast / *and* þat dyrkenesse
 hydeth // *and* certes he þat desireth oonly power / he wasteth *and*
 schatereth rychesse / *and* despyseth delyc² / *and* ek honour þat is
 with-owte power / ne he ne preyseth glorie no thing // Certes thus
 24 seesthow wel þat manye thinges faylen to hym // ffor he hath som
 tyme defaute of many necessarytes / *and* many angwyssos byten
 hym // *and* whan he ne may nat don tho defautes a wey / he flor-
 letith to ben myhty / *and* þat is the thing þat he most desyret //
 28 *and* ryht thus may .I. maken semlable resouns of honours / *and* of
 glorie / *and* of delic² // ffor so as euery of thyse forseyde thinges *is*
 the same that thise oother thinges ben / þat is to seyn al oon thing //
 who so þat euer sekith to geten þat oon of thise / *and* nat þat
 32 oothre // he ne gete[t]h nat þat he desireth // boece // what seysth
 thanne / yif þat a man coueyteth to geten alle thise thinges *to*
 gydere // P // Certes quod she .I. wolde seye þat he wolde gete^r

¹ leaf 86, back.² delycus, delicus.

m souereyn blysfulnesse/ /but þat shal he nat fynde in the
 nges þat .I. haue shewyd / þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-
 ten // boece/ /Certes no quod .I. // thanne quod she / ne sholden
 en nat / by no wey seken blysfulnesse in swyche thinges as men 4
 ne þat they ne mowen yeuen but o thing senglely of alle þat men
 ten // B. / I. graunte wel quod .I. ne no sothere thing ne may ben
 yd / P. // now hasthow thanne quod she / the forme and the causes
 false welefulnesse/ /now torne and flitte the eyen of thy thought / 8
 r there shalthow sen a-non thilke verray blysfulnesse / þat .I.
 ue by-hyht the // boece/ /Certes quod .I. it is cler and opyn thowh
 were to a blynde man/ /and þat shewedest thou me ful wel a lytel
 re by-forne // whan thou enforcedest the to shewe me the causes of 12
 e false blysfulnesse/ /ffor but yif I be bygyld thanne is thilke the
 rray blysfulnesse parfyt / þat parfytly maketh a man / suffisaunt /
 /hty / honourable / noble / and ful of gladnesse // and for thou
 alt wel knowe / þat .I. haue wel vnderstonden thyse thinges with- 16
 my herte/ /I. knowe wel þat thilke blysfulnesse / þat may
 rrayly yeuen oon of the forseide thinges syn they ben al oon / .I.
 owe dowteles þat thilke thing is the fulle blysfulnesse/ /P // O
 y norye quod she / by this opynion / .I. seye þat thou art blysful / 20
 f thou putte this ther-to / þat .I. shal seyn / what is that quod
 // trowesthow þat ther be any thing in thise erthely mortal towm-
 lynges thinges / þat may bryngen this estat/ /Certes quod .I. I
 owe it nawht/ /and thou hast shewed me wel þat ouer thilke 24
 od ther nis no thing more to ben desired / P / /Thise thinges
 anne quod she / þat is to sey Erthely suffisaunce / and power /
 al swyche thinges / eyther they semen lykenesses of verray good/
 Or elles it semith that they yeue to mortal folk a manere of 28
 odes / that ne ben nat parfyt // but thilke good þat is verray and
 rfyt / þat may they nat yeuen/ /Boece/ /I acorde me wel quod
 // p / /thanne quod she for as mochel as thou hast knowen /
 rich is thilke verray blysfulnesse/ /and ek whyche thilke thinges 32
 n / þat lyen falsly blysfulnesse / þat is to seyn þat by deceite
 men verrey goodes // now by-houeth the to knowe whennes and

where thou mowe seke thilke verray blysfulnesse Certes quod .I.
that desire .I. gretly *and* haue a-byden longe tyme to herknen it /
/but for as moche quod she as it liketh to my dissipule plato in his
4 book of in tymeo þat in ryht lytel thinges / men sholden by-shechen
the help of god // what Iugest thou þat be now to done / so that
we may deserue to fynde the sete of thilke verray good/ /B//
Certes quod .I. / .I. deme / þat we shollen clepen the fadyr of alle
8 goodes ffor with-owten hym nis ther nothing fownden a Ryht //
thow seyst a ryht quod she / *and* bygan anon to synge ryht thus //

The 9th Metur [*Leaf 88, margin*]

12 **O** Thow fadyr Creator of heuene and of erthes pat gouernest
this world by *perdurable resoun* / pat comaundest the
tymes to gon from syn pat age hadde bygynnynges/ Thow
pat dwellest thy self ay stedefast *and* stable / *and* yeuest
alle oothre thinges / to ben moeued/ /ne foreyne causes ne cesseden
the neuere to compowne werk of floterynge matere // but oonly the
16 forme of souereyn good Iset *with-in* the *with-owte* enuye / pat
moeuede the frely/ /thow pat art alder fayrest berynge the fayre
world / in thy thowht / formedyst this world to the lyknesse
semblable of pat fayre world in thy thowht // thow drawest al thing
20 of thy souereyn ensaumpler / *and* comaundest pat this world parfyt-
lyche .I.-maked / haue freely hys parfyt parties/ /thow byndest
the *elementus* by nowmbyres porcionables/ /pat the colde thinges
mowen acorden *with* the hote thinges // *and* the drye thinges *with*
24 the moyst thinges/ /pat the fyr pat is purest ne fle nat ouer hye /
ne pat the heuynysse ne drawen nat a-down ouer lowe / the erthes
pat ben plownged in the wateres/ /thow knytttest to-gydere the
meene sowle¹ of treble kynde / moeuynges alle thinges / *and*
28 deuydest it by menbres / acordynge/ /*and* whan it is *thus*
deuyded / it hath a-semblid a moeuynges in to two Rowndes // it
goth to torne ayein to hym self / *and* enuyrowneth a ful deep
thowht²/ *and* tornet the heuene by semblable ymage/ /thow by
32 euene lyke causes enhansest the sowles *and* the lasse lyues // *and*

¹ *gloss* : .i. anima mundi.

² *gloss* : .i. deus.

lynge hem heye by lyhte cartes / thow sowest hem in to heuene
 & in to Erthe / and whan they ben conuerted To the by thy
 gynnyng lawe / thow makest hem retorne ayein to the by
 ein ledyng fyr // O fadyr yue thow to the thowht² / to styen vp in⁴
 the streyte sete³ / and graunte hym to enuerowne the welle of
 od // and the lyht yfownde / graunte hym to fychen the clere
 htes of hys corage in the / and skatere thow and to-breke thow
 e weyhtes and the clowdes of erthely heuynesse // And shyne⁸
 ow by thy bryhtnesse / ffor thow art clernesse / pou art peysyble reste
 debonayre folkes // thow thy self art by-gynnyng / berere / ledere /
 ath and terme / to loke on the that is owre ende //

¶ The 10th prose [Leaf 91, back]

FOr as moche thanne as thow hast seyn / which is the forme¹²
 of good pat nis nat parfyt / and whych is the forme of good
 pat is parfyt / now trowe .I. pat it were good / to shewe in
 what⁴ this perfeccyon of blysfulnesse is set / and in this
 hing .I. trowe pat we sholden fyrst enquire for to wyten / yif pat¹⁶
 ny swyche manere good as thilke good that thow hast dyffynyssed
 lytel heere by-forn / pat is to seyn souereyn good / may ben
 fownde in the nature of thinges // ffor that veyn ymagynacyon of
 thowght / ne deceyue vs nat / and putte vs owte⁵ Of the sothfastnesse /²⁰
 of thilke thing pat is svmmytted to us / but it may nat ben
 lenoyed / pat thilke good ne is / and pat it nis ryht as welle⁶ of alle
 goodes / ffor alle thing pat is clepyd inparfyt / is proeued inparfyt /
 by the amenusyng of perfeccion⁷ or of thing pat is parfyt // and²⁴
 her-of comht it / pat in euery thing general / yif that men sen any
 hing / pat is inparfyt / Certes in thilke general ther mot ben som
 hing pat is parfyt / ffor yif so be pat perfeccyon is don a-wey
 en may nat thinke / ne seye fro whennes thilke thing is pat is²⁸
 lepyd inparfyt / ffor the nature of thinges ne took not hyr
 ygynnyng of thinges amenused and inparfyt / But it procedeth
 f thinges pat ben al hoole and absolut⁸ // and dessendeth so

¹ leaf 88, back.

² gloss: .s. boecii.

³ gloss: .i. summe bone.

⁴ gloss: 'que nam': Latin prose, lf. 88, bk, 'quo nam.'

⁵ leaf 92.

⁶ gloss: .i. deus.

⁷ gloss: .i. perfecti.

⁸ gloss: .i. laws.

down in to owtterest^t thinges / and in to thinges empty and with-
owten frut/ /but as .I. haue Ishewyd a lytul her byforn / þat yif
ther be a blysfulnesse þat be freele and veyn and inparfyt // ther
4 may no man dowte that ther nis som blysfulnesse / þat is sad
stydefast and parfyt/ /b./ /this is concluded quod .I. fermely and
sothfastly // p // but considere also quod she in wham this blysful-
nesse enhabyteth/ /the comune acordaunce and conseite of the
8 corages of men proeueth and graunteth / þat God prynce of alle
thinges is good/ /ffor so as nothing ne may ben thowht^t better than
god / It may nat ben dowed thanne / þat he þat nothing nis better/
þat he nis good/ /Certes reson sheweth þat God is so good / þat it
12 proueth by verray force þat parfyt good is in hym // ffor yif God
ne is swych he ne may nat ben prinse of alle thinges / for certes som
thing possessyng in itself parfyt good / sholde be more worthy than
god/ /and it sholde semen that thilke thing weere fyrst / and eldere
16 than god // ffor we han shewyd apertly / þat alle thinges þat ben
parfyt^t ben fyrst or thinges þat ben vnparfyt/ /And for-thy for as
moche as that my resoun / or my processes ne go nat a-wey with-owte
an ende // we owen to graunten / þat the souereyn god is ryhtful of
20 souereyn parfyt^t good/ /And we han establysshed þat the souereyn
good is verray blysfulnesse // thanne mot it nedes be / þat verray
blysfulnesse is set in souereyn God/ /b/ /this take I. wel quod I /
ne this ne may nat^t ben withseid / in no manere/ /but .I. preye
24 quod she / see now how þou mayst proeuen holyly and with-owte
corupcionⁿ this þat I. haue seyde / þat the souereyn God is ryhtful of
souereyn good // In whych manere quod I. / Wenesthow awht
quod she / þat this prynce of alle thinges haue .I. take thilke souereyn
28 good any wher owt of hym self/ /Of whych souereyn good men
proueth þat he is ful / ryht^t as thow myhtest / thinken / þat God
þat hath blysfulnesse in hym self / and thilke blysfulnesse þat is in
hym / weren diuers in substaunce // ffor yif thow wene þat God haue
32 resseyud thilke good owt^t of hym self/ /thow mayst wene þat he
þat yaf thike good to god / be more worthy thanne is god/ /but .I.
am by-knowen and confesse / and þat ryht dignely / that god is ryht^t

orthy abouen alle thinges/ /and yif so be þat this good be in hym
nature // but that is is diuers fro hym by wenyng resoun / syn
e speke of God prynce of alle thinges / faigne who so feigne may /
ho was he þat hath conioined these diuerse thinges to-gidere/ /and 4
at the laste / se wel þat a thing þat is diuers from any thing /
that thilke thing nis nat that same thing / ffor whych it is
ndyrstonden to ben diuerse/ /Thanne folweth it / þat thilke
ing þat by hys nature is diuerse fro souereyn good / þat 8
that thing nis nat souereyn good/ /but certes þat weere a felons
rasednesse to thinken that of hym¹ / þat nothing is more worth ffor
wey of alle thinges / the nature of hem ne may nat ben better than
is bygynnyng // ffor whych .I. may concluden by ryht verray 12
resoun / þat thilke þat is bygynny[n]g of alle thinges / thilke same
hing is souereyn good in hys substaunce/ /b/ /thow has seyde
ht-fully quod .I. // p. // But we han graunted quod she that the
uereyn good is blysfulnesse/ /and þat is soth quod .I./ /Thanne 16
quod she moten we nedes graunten and confessen that thilke same
uereyn good be god/ /Certes quod I. / I. ne may nat denye ne
ithstonde the resouns purposed / and .I. se wel þat it folweth by
rengthe of the premysses/ /loke now quod she yif this be proued 20
it more fermely thus / þat ther ne mowen nat ben two souereyn
odes / þat ben diuerse amonge hem self // ffor certes the goodes
nat ben diuerse amonges hem self / þat oon nis nat þat þat othere is/
thanne ne mowen neyther ²Of hem ben parfyt / so as eyther of 24
em lakketh to other/ /but þat þat nis nat parfyt / men may sen
ertly þat it is nat souereyn / the thinges thanne that ben
uereynly goode / ne mowen by no wey ben diuerse // but .I. haue
el concluded / þat blysfulnesse and god ben the souereyn good / 28
or whyche it mot nedes ben / þat souereyn blysfulnesse is souereyn
uynyte / nothing quod .I. nis more sothfast than this / ne more
rme by resoun / ne a more worthy thing than god may nat ben
ncluded/ /p./ /vp on these thinges thanne quod she / Ryht as 32
yse geometryens whan they han shewyd byr proposiciouns ben
ont to bryngen in thinges / þat they clepyen porysmes / or decla-

¹ gloss: deo.

² leaf 93.

raciouns of forseide thinges/ /Ryht so wole .I. yeue the heere as a
 corolarye / or a mede of coroune ffor why for as moche as by the
 getyng of blysfulnesse men ben makid blysful / *and* blysfulnesse is
 4 diuinite/ /thanne is it manyfest *and* opyn / þat by the getyng of
 diuynite / men ben makid blysful / Ryht as by the getyng of
 Iustyce / *and* by the getyng of sapience they ben makid wyse //
 8 Ryht so nedes by the semblable resoun / whan they han getyn
 deuynite / they ben makid goddes/ /thanne is euery blysful man
 god // but certes by nature ther nis but o god / but by thy partysy-
 passion of deuynite / ther ne let ne desturbyth nothing that ther ne
 ben many goddes // This is *quod* .I. a fayr thing *and* precios / clepe
 12 it as thou wolt / be it porisme or corollarye/ /Or meede of coroune /
 or declarynges/ /Certes *quod* she nothyng nis fayrere than is the
 thing þat by resoun sholde ben added to thyse forseide thinges/
 /what thing *quod* .I. / so *quod* she as it semeth that blysfulnesse
 16 contenyth many thinges / it were for to whyten wheyther þat alle
 this thinges maken or conioignen as a manere body of blysfulnesse /
 be diuersite of parties or of menbrys/ /Or elles yif any of alle
 thilke thinges be swych / þat it acomplyse by hym self the
 20 substaunce of blysfulnesse / so that alle thise oothre thinges ben
 referred *and* browht to blysfulnesse / that is to seyn as to the chief
 of them / *quod* .I. that thou makedest me clerly to vnder-
 stonde what thou seyst / *and* þat thou reedadyst me the forseide
 24 thinges // haue .I. nat Iuged *quod* she / þat blysfulnesse is good / ys
 forsothe *quod* .I. *and* þat souereyn good/ /Adde thure *quod* she
 thilke good þat is makid blysfulnesse to alle the forseide thinges /
 ffor thilke same blysfulnesse þat is demed to ben souereyn suffisaunce/
 28 thilke selue is souereyn power / souereyn reuerence / souereyn clernes-
 se or noblesse / *and* souereyn delit / .Conclusio. / what seyst þou hanne of
 alle thinges / þat is to seyn / suffyssaunce / power / *and* this oothre
 thinges / ben they thanne as menbrys of blysfulnesse / or be they
 32 referred *and* browht to souereyn good / ryht as alle thinges ys ben
 browht to the chief of hem/ /B // .I. vnderstonde wel
 .I. / what thou purposest to seke / but .I. desire for to here

þat thow shewe it me / p //tak now thus the descression of this
questyoun quod / she // yif alle thise thinges quod she weeren
menbrys to felicite / than weeren they diuerse þat oon from that
oother / and swych is the nature of partyes / or of menbris that⁴
diuerse menbrys compownen a body / Certes quod .I. it hath wel
ben shewyd heere by-forn / þat alle thise thinges ben alle o thing /
thanne ben they none menbrys quod she // ffor elles it sholde seme
þat blysfulnesse weere conioigned / al of on menbre allone / but þat is 8
a thing þat may nat be don / this thing quod .I. nis nat doughtous /
but .I. abyde to herkennen the remnaunt of thy questyon / this is
opyn and cler quod she / þat alle oothre thinges ben referred and
browht to good // ffor the[r]fore is suffisaunce requeryd / for it is 12
demyd to ben good / and forthy is power requered / ffor men trowen
also / þat it be good // and this same thing mowen we thinken and
coniecten / of Reuerence and of noblesse / and of delit / thanne is
souereyn good the somme / and the cause of al þat awht ben desyred / 16
/ ffor why thilke thing þat wyth-holdeth no good in it-self / ne
semblaunce of good / it ne may nat wel in no manere be desired ne
required // and the contrarye / ffor thogh that thinges by hyr
nature / ne ben nat goode / Algates yif men wene þat they ben 20
goode / yit ben they desyred as thowgh þat they weeren verraylyche
¹Goode // and therfor is it þat men owhten to wene byryht / þat
bounte be the souereyn fyn / and the cause of alle the thinges þat
ben to requeren / but certes thilke þat is cause / for whych men 24
requeren any thing / it semeth þat thilke same thing be most
desyred / as thus yif þat a wyht wolde ryden for cause of hele / he
ne desyreth nat so mochel the moeuyng to Rydin / as the effect of
hys hele / now thanne syn þat alle thinges ben required for the grace 28
of good / they ne ben nat desyred of alle folk moore thanne the
same good // but we han graunted þat blysfulnesse is that thing /
for whyche þat alle thyse oothre thinges ben desyred / thanne is it
thus that certes oonly blysfulnesse is required and desired / by 32
whyche thing it sheweth clerly / that of good and of blysfulnesse / is
al oon and the same substaunce / .I. se nat quod .I. wherfore þat

men myhten discorden in this // And we han shewyd þat
 verray blysfulnesse / is al oo thing/ /that is soth quod .]
 mowen we conclude sikerly / þat the substaunce of God¹ is set
 4 same good *and* in non oother place./

¶ The 10th Metur [Leaf 94, back, margin]

8 **O** Comyth alle to-gyders now / ye þat ben .I.-ca
 ybownde *with* wyckyde cheynes // by the deceyua
 of Erthely thinges enhabytyng in yowre tho
 shal ben the reste of yowre labours // her ys the
 stable in peysyble quiete/ /this allone is the opyn refut^t to wre
 Glosa. This to seyn þat ye þat ben combyrd *and* desseyu
 worldely affeccyouns / comyth now to this souereyn good / þe
 12 þat is refut^t to hem þat wolen comyn to hym / *textus* alle th
 that the Ryuer tagus yeueth yow / *with* hys goldene grauayles,
 alle the thinges / þat the Ryuer herynus y[e]ueth *with* his red
 /Or that Indus yeueth þat is next the hote party of the w
 16 medleth the grene stones³ *with* the whyte⁴ / ne sholde nat cl
 lookynge of yowre thowht^t / but hyden rather yowre blynde
with-in hyr dyrknesse/ /Al that lyketh yow heere *and* exc
 moeueth yowre thowhtes / the erthe hath norysshed it in l
 20 caues/ /but the shynynge by whyche the heuene is gouern
 whennes he hath hys strengthe // that eschueth the dyrke ou
 ynge of the sowle/ *and* who so may knowyn thilke lyht^t of
 nesse / he shal wel seyn / þat the whyte beemes of the sonr
 24 nat cleer //

¶ The .1.1. prose [Leaf 98, margin]

28 **B**oece // I assente me quod .I. / ffor alle thise thi
 strongly bownden *with* ryht ferme resouns/ /Hov
 wylthow preysyn it quod she / yif þat thow kn
 thilke good is/ /I wol preyse it quod .I. / by pre
 owten ende / yif it shal be-tydde me to knowe also to-gyde
 þat is good/ /Certes quod she shal .I. do the / by verray

¹ gloss : i. dei.

³ gloss : i. smaragdes.

² gloss : i. portus.

⁴ gloss : i. Margaretes.

/yif that tho thinges þat I haue concluded / a litel her byforn / dwellen
only in hyr fyrst graunting¹ // Boece // they dwellen graunted to the
quod .I./ /this is to seyn as who seyth / .I. graunte thy forseide
conclusiouns / haue .I. nat shewyd the quod she / þat the thinges þat 4
ben requered of many folkes ne ben nat verray goodes / ne parfyte /
for they ben diuerse þat oon fro þat oothre // and so as ech of hem
is lackynge to other / they ne han no power to bryngen a good / þat
is ful and absolut / but thanne at erste / ben they verray good / 8
whan they ben gaderid to gidere / alle in to O forme / and in on
wyrkynge / so þat thilke thinge þat is suffisaunce / thilke same be
power / and reuerence / and noblesse / and myrthe / and forsothe
but yif alle thyse thinges / ben alle oon same thing¹ they ne han nat 12
wherby / þat they mowen ben put in the nowmbyr of thinges þat
owhten ben requered or desyred / boece // it is shewyd quod .I. /
ne her of may no man dowten / p / the thinges thanne quod she
þat ne ben no Goodes / whanne they ben diuerse / and whan they 16
bygynnyn to ben alle oon thing / thanne ben they goodes / ne comth
it hem nat thanne by the getynge of vnite / that they ben makid
goodes / B. / So it semyth quod .I. / but alle thing þat is good quod
she grauntisthow þat it be good by the participacioun of good / or no / 20
/ .I. graunte it quod I // thanne mosthow graunten quod she / by
semlable resoun þat oon and good be oo same thing / ffor of thinges
of whyche þat the effect nis nat naturely diuerse / nedes the sub-
staunce mot be oo same thinge / I ne may nat denye þat quod .I. // 24
hasthow nat knowen wel quod she / þat alle thing þat is / hath so
longe his dwellynge and his substaunce / as longe as it is oon / but
whan it forletyth to ben oon / yt mot nedes dyen and corumpe to
gydere // in which manere quod I. / ryht as in bestys quod she whan 28
the sowle and the body ben conioigne in oon and dwellyn togydyre /
it is clepyd a beest / and whan hyr vnite is destroyed / by the
desseueraunce þat oon from þat oother / thanne sheweth it wel / þat
it is a ded thing / and þat it nis no lengere no beest // and þe body of 32
a whyht whil it dwelleth in oo forme by coniuncceyoun of menbrys /
it is wel seyn / þat it is a fygure of man kynde / and yif the partyes

¹ leaf 98, back.

of the body ben so deuydyd / *and disseueryd* / þat oon fro þat oother /
 þat they destroyen vnite / the body forletyth to ben þat it is was
 byforn / *and* who wolde renne in the same manere by alle thinges be
 4 sholde seen þat *with-owte* dowte euery thing is in his substaunce / as
 longe as it is oon / *and* whan it forletith to ben oon / it dieth *and*
 periseth / Boece // whan .I. consydere *quod* .I. manye thinges / .I. se
 non oother / *is* ther any thing thanne *quod* she þat in as moche as it
 8 lyuyth naturelly / þat forletyth the talent or appetyt of his beyng /
and desireth to come to deth *and* to corrupcion / yif .I. consydere
quod I the beestes þat han any manere nature / of wyllynge *and*
 of nyllynge // I. ne fynde no beest / but yif it ben constreynyd fro
 12 *with owte* forth / þat forletith or despiseth the entensyon to lyuen
and to duren or þat wole his thanks / hasten hym to dyen ¹for
 euery beest / trauaylith hym to deffende *and* kepe the sauacion of
 hys lyf / eschueth deth *and* destrucioun / B // but Certes I dowte
 16 me of herbes *and* of trees / þat is to seyn þat I am in a dowte of
 swiche thinges as herbes or trees / þat ne han no feelynge sowles / ne
 no naturel wyrkynges seruyng to appetites / as bestis han wheither
 thei han apetid to dwellen *and* to duren / Certes *quod* she ne ther-of
 20 thar the nat dowte // now loke vp on thise herbys *and* thise trees
 they waxen fyrst in swiche places as ben couenable to hem / in
 whyche places they ne mowen nat sone dyen / ne dryen / as longe as
 hyr nature may deffenden hem / ²for som of hem waxen in feeldes /
 24 *and* som in Mountaignes / *and* oothre waxen in marys / *and* oothre
 cleuyn on Roches / *and* soume waxen plentyuous in sondes / *and* yif þat
 any wyht enforce hym to beryn hem in to oother places / they waxen
 drye // ³for nature yeueth to euery thing þat / þat is conuenient to hym
 28 *and* trauaylith þat they ne dye nat as longe as they han power to
 dwellyn *and* to lyuen / what woltow seyn of this / þat they drawen
 alle hyr norysshynge by hyr rootes / ryht as they haddyn hyr
 Mowthes I. plounged *with-in* the erthes / *and* shedyn by hyr maryes³
 32 hyr wode *and* hyr bark / *and* what woltow seyn of this þat thilke
 thing / þat is ryht softe as the marye is / þat is alwey hidd in the feste
 al *with-inne* *and* þat is is defendid fro *with-owte* by the stidefastnesse

¹ leaf 99.² gloss: .i. medulle.

of wode // *and* þat the vttereste bark is put ayenis destempraunce of
the heuene / as a defendowr myhty to suffren harm/ /*and* thus certes
maystow wel sen / how gret is the diligence of nature / ffor alle
thinges renouelen *and* pupplisen hem with seed .I.-multiplied / ne ther 4
nis no man þat ne wot wel þat they ne ben ryht as a foundement *and*
edyfice for to duren / nat only for a tyme / but ryht as for to duren
perdurably by generacyon // *and* the thinges ek þat men wenen ne
hauen none sowles / ne desire they nat ech. of hem by sem¹blable 8
reson to kepyn þat that is hers / þat is to seyn þat is acordynge to hyr
nature in conseruacion) of hyr beynge *and* endurynge/ /ffor wher-for
alles berith Lythnesse the flaumbes vp / *and* the weyhte presseth the
erthe a doun/ /but ffor as moche as thilke places *and* thilke moeuynge 12
ben couenable to euerich of hem/ /*and* forsothe euery thing kepith
thilke þat is acordynge *and* propre to hym // ryht as thinges þat ben
contraries *and* enemys corompen hem/ /*and* yit the harde thinges as
stoones clyuen *and* holden hyr partyes to-gydere ryht faste *and* harde / 16
and deffenden hem in withstondenge þat they ne departe nat lyhtly
a twyne // *and* the thinges þat ben softe *and* fletynge as is water *and*
Eyr they departyn lyhtly / *and* yeuen place to hem þat brekyn or
deuyden hem/ /but natheles they retornen sone ayein in to the same 20
thinges fro whennes they ben arraced // but fyr *and* refuseth alle
deuysyon / ne I. ne trete nat heere now of weleful moeuynge of
the sowle þat is knowynge/ /but of the naturel entencion) of thinges/
/As thus ryht as we swolwe the mete þat we resseyuen *and* ne 24
thinke nat on it / *and* as we drawen owre breth in slepynge þat we
wite it nat whil we slepyt / ffor certes in the beestys the loue of hyr
lyuynge ne of hyr beeinges ne comth nat of the wilnynges of the
sowle // but of the bygynnyngis of nature/ /ffor certes thorw con- 28
streynynge causes / wil desireth *and* embraceth ful ofte tyme / the
deth þat nature dredith/ /that is to seyn as thus that a man may
ben constreynyd so by som cause that his wil desireth *and* taketh
the deth which þat nature hateth *and* dredeth ful sore / /And som 32
tyme we seeth the contrarie / as thus that the wil of a wight / des-
torbeth *and* constreyneth þat þat nature desireth / *and* requereth al

¹ leaf 99, back.

wey/ /that is to sein the werk of generacion/ / by the whiche
 generacion only / dwelleth and is sustenyd the longe durablete of
 mortal thinges/ /And thus this charite and this Lote þat every
 4 thing hath to hym self ne comth nat of the moeuynge of the sowle/
 but of the entencion of nature/ /ffor the puruyance of god hat
 yeuen to thinges þat ben creat of hym / this þat is a ful gret cause/
 to lyuen and to duren / for which they desiren naturelly hyr lyf as
 8 longe as euer they mowen/ /ffor wych thow maist nat drede by no
 manere / that alle the thinges / that ben anywhere / that they ne
 requeren naturelly / the ferme stablenesse of perdurable dwellynge/
 and ek the eschuyng of destruccyon/ /B // now confesse I wel
 12 quod .I. that I. see wel now certeynly / with owte dowtes / the
 thinges that whylom semeden vncerteyn to me / P. / /but quod
 she thilke thyng þat desireth to be and to dwellyn perdurablely/ he
 desireth to ben oon/ /ffor yif þat that oon weere destroyed/ /certes
 16 beinge ne shulde ther non dwellyn to no wiht // that is soth quod
 I./ /Thanne quod she desirin alle thinges oon/ /I. assente quod .I.
 and I haue shewyd quod she that thilke same oon is thilke that is
 good // B // ye for sothe quod I. // Alle thinges thanne quod she
 20 requyren good/ /And thilke good thanne maist descryuen ryht thus/
 / Good is thilke thing þat every wyht desireth/ /Ther ne may be
 thowht quod .I. no moore verray thing / for either alle thinges be
 referred and browht to nowht / and floteryn with owte gouernour
 24 despoiled of oon / as of hir propre heued / or elles yif ther be an
 thinge / to which þat alle thinges tenden and hyen / that thing
 moste ben the souereyn good of alle goodes / P/. thanne seyde sh
 thus/ /O my nory quod she I haue gret gladnesse of the/ /ffor thow
 28 hast fichched in thin herte the myddel sothfastnesse // that is t
 seyn the prykke/ /but this thing hath ben descouered to the / i
 that thow seydst þat thow wystem nat a lytel her by forn // wha
 was that quod I./ /That thow ne wystem nat quod she whych wa
 32 the ende of thinges // and Certes that is the thing þat every wi
 desireth/ /and for as mochel as we han gaderid / and comprehend
 that good is thilke thing that is desired of alle / thanne moten w
 nedes confessun / that good is the fyn of alle thinges /

¶ The .1.1. Metur [*Leaf 100, back, margin*]

W Ho so that sekith soth by a deep thoght And coueyteth
 nat to ben deseyuyd by no mys weyes // lat hym rollen
 and trenden with-Inne hym¹self / the Lyht of his
 inward syhte / And lat hym gadere ayein enclynyng 4
 to a compas the longe moeuynge of hys thowhtes / And lat hym
 hen his corage that he hath enclosed and hyd / in his tresors / al
 he compaseth or sekith fro with owte / And thanne thilke thing
 t the blake cloude of errour whilom hadde y-couered shal lyhten 8
 re clerly thanne pheb; hym self ne shyneth / Glosa / Who so
 e seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / and wol nat be
 eyuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe //
 hym wel examine / and rolle with-inne hym self the nature and 12
 propretes of the thing / and lat hym yit eft sones examine and
 len his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // and lat
 n techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche
 yd with-in it self alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben 16
 thinges with-owte // And thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mys-
 wyngne shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vndyrstondyng
 ne the sonne ne semyth to syhte with owte forth / ffor certes the
 ly bryngyngne the weyhte of foryetyngne / ne hath nat chasyd owt 20
 yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowyng / ffor certeynly
 seed of sooth haldith and clyueth with-in yowre corage and it is
 aked and excited by the wynde and by the blastes of doctryne /
 wherefor elles demen ye of yowre owne wyl the ryhtes whan ye 24
 axed // but yif so were pat the norryssynges of reson ne lyuede
 plowngyd in the depthe of yowre herte / this is to seyn how
 den men demen pe sooth of any thing pat weere axed / yif ther
 e a Roote of sothfastnesse pat weere yplowngyd and hyd in the 28
 re pryncyplis / the whiche sothfastnesse lyued with-in the dep-
 e of the thowght / and yif so be pat the Muse and the doctryne
 lato syngyth sooth // al pat euery whyht lerneth / he ne doth no
 g elles thanne but recordeth as men recordyn thinges pat ben 32
 etyn

¹ leaf 101.

¶ The .1.2. prose [Leaf 104, margin]

THanne seide I thus/ /I acorde me gretly to plato / for thow
 remenbrist *and* recordist me thise thinges / yit the secounde
 tyme / þat is to seyn / fyrst whan I loste my memorye / by
 4 the contagyos coniuncsion of the body with the sowle/ *and*
 eft sones afterward / whan I loste it confowndyd by the charge *and*
 by the burdene of my sorwe // And thanne seide she thus / yif thow
 looke quod she fyrst / the thinges þat thow hast grauntyd / it ne
 8 shal nat ben ryht fer / þat thow ne shalt remenbryn thilke thing þat
 thow seydyt þat thow nystyst nat/ /what thing quod I/ /by which
 gouvernement quod she þat this wordyl ys gouerned // me remenbryth
 it wel quod .I. / *and* I confesse wel þat I ne wiste it nawght/ /but
 12 al be it so þat .I. se now from a-fer what thow purposest/ /Algates
 .I. desire yit to herkene it of the more pleynty/ /thow ne wendist
 nat quod she / a litel her by-forn þat men sholden dowte / þat this
 world nis gouerned ¹by God/ /Certes quod I / ne yit ne dowte I it
 16 nawht // ne .I. nel neuer wene þat it were to dowte / as who seith /
 but I wot wel þat god gouerneth this world / *and* I shal shortly
 answeren the / by what resouns I am browht to this/ /this world
 quod I of so manye diuerse *and* contrarios parties / ne nyhte neuer
 20 han ben assemblyd in o forme/ /but yif ther nere² oon þat con-
 ioignede so manye diuerse thinges/ *and* the same diuersite of hir
 natures þat so discordyn þat oon fro þat oother / moste departen /
and vn-Ioignen the thinges þat ben conioigned // yif ther ne weere
 24 oon þat contenede / þat he hath conioyned *and* I-bownde/ /ne the
 certeyn ordre of nature / ne sholde nat brynge forth so ordene
 moeuynge / by places / by tymes / by dooinges / by splaces / by
 qualites // yif ther ne weere oon þat weere ay stidefast dwellynge /
 28 þat ordeynede & disponede thise diuersitees of moeuynge / & thilke
 thing what so euer it be / by which þat alle thinges be makend *and*
 I-ladd/ /I. clepe hym god / þat is a word þat is vsed to alle foolk/
 /thanne seyde she / syn thow feelyst thus thise thinges quod she/ /I
 32 trowe þat I haue litel moore to done þat thow myhty of welefulnesse /
 hool *and* sounde / ne see eft sones thy contre/ /but lat vs loken the

¹ leaf 104, back.² alterd, later, to 'ne were.'

things þat we ha purposed her by-for/ /haue .I. nat nowmbryd
and seyð quod she / þat suffisaunce is in blysfulnesse / and we han a-
cordyd þat god is thilke same blysfulnesse // yis forsothe quod .I. //
and þat to gouerne this world quod she ne shal he neuer han nede of 4
non help fro with owte/ /ffor ellis yif he hadde nede of any help /
he ne sholde nat haue no ful suffisaunce / yis / thus it mot nedes be
quod .I./ /thanne ordeynyth he by hym self allone alle things quod
she // that may nat be denoyed quod I./ /And .I. haue shewyd that 8
god is the same good/ /it remenbryth me wel quod .I./ /thanne
ordeynith he alle things by thilke good quod she / syn he which
þat we han a-cordyd to be good / gouernyth alle things by hym self //
and he is as a keye / and a stiere / by which / þat the ledifice of 12
this world is I-kept stable / and with-owte coroumpynge // I a-
corde me gretely quod I/ /and .I. aparseyuode a lytul her by-for/ /
þat thow woldyst seye thus / al be it so þat it weere by a thinne
suspecyon/ /I. trowe it wel quod she / ffor as .I. trowe thow ledyst 16
now moore ententyfly thyne eyen to loken the verray goodes But
natles the thing þat I shal telle the yit ne shewith nat lasse to
looken² // what is þat quod I // so as men trowen quod she / and þat
ryhtfully / þat god gouernith alle things by the keye of his goodnesse/ 20
/ and alle thise same things as .I. haue tawht the / hasten hem by
natural entencyon to comen to good // ther may no man dowten þat
they ne ben gouerned voluntaryely and þat they ne conuertten hem
of hir owne wil to the wil of hyr ordenoure as they that ben a- 24
cordynge and enclyninge to hyr gouernoure and hyr kyng/ it mot
nedes be so quod .I./ /for the Reaume ne sholde nat semen blysful
yif ther weere a yok³ of mysdrawynges⁴ in diuerse partyes / ne the
sauynge of obedient things ne sholde nat be // thanne is ther nothing 28
quod she þat kepith his nature þat enforcith hym to goon ayein god/
/ no quod I. // and yif þat any thing enforcede hym to with-stonde
god / myhte it auaylen at the laste a-yenis hym / þat we han graunted
to ben almyhty by the ryht of blysfulnesse/ /Certes quod I al 32
owtrely it ne myhte nat auaylen hem // thanne is ther no thing

¹ leaf 105.² gloss : .i. considerandum.³ gloss : .i. iugum.⁴ gloss : .i. recusancium.

quod she þat eyther wole or may with-standyn to his souereyn good/
 /I. trowe nat quod .I. // thanne is thilke the souereyn good
 quod she þat alle thinges gouerneth strongly / and ordeyneth hem
 4 softtely/ /thanne seyde I thus/ /I delite m^e quod .I. nat oonly in
 the endes or in the somme of the¹ resouns þat thou hast concluded
 and proeued // but thilke wordes þat thou vset deliten me moche
 moore/ /so at the laste fooles þat sumtyme renden grete thinges
 8 owhten ben ashamyd of hem self // þat is to seyn ²þat we fooles þat
 reprehendnen / wikkedly the thinges þat towchen goddes gouernaunce/
 / we owhten ben asshamyd of owre self/ /as .I. þat seyde þat god
 refusith oonly þe werkes of men and ne entremetith nat of it // p //
 12 thou hast wel herd quod she the fables of the poetes/ /how þe
 gyauntz assayleden the heuene with the goddes / but for sothe the
 debonayre force of god desposede hem / as it was worthy / þat is to
 seyn destroyede the giauntz as it was worthi/ /but wil thou þat we
 16 ioignen to-gidere thilke same reasons // for peraenture of swych
 coniuneyon may sterten vp som fair sparkle of soth/ /do quod .I. as
 the liste // weenest thou quod she þat God ne be almyhty / no nis in
 dowte of it/ /Certes quod .I. no wyht ne dwteth it/ /yif it be in
 20 his mynde/ /but he quod she þat is al-myhty / ther nis no thing
 þat he ne may/ /þat is soth quod .I./ /May god don yuel quod she/
 /nay forsothe quod I // thanne is yuel nothing quod she/ /syn þat he
 ne may nat don yuel / þat may don alle thinges // scornesthow thou
 24 me quod I/ /or elles pleyesthow / or desseyuesthow me / þat hast so
 wouen me with thy resouns the hows of dydalus / so entrelaced / þat
 it is vn-able to be vn-laced/ /thow þat oother while entrist ther þou
 issest / and oother while issest ther thou entrist/ /ne fooldesthow nat
 28 to-gyders by replycacion of wordis / a manere wondyrful cercle or enuyr-
 onyng of the symplicyte deuyne/ /ffor certes a lytel her^e By-form /
 whan thou by-gunne at blysfulnesse // thou seydist þat it is souereyn
 good/ /and seidist / þat it is set in souereyn god/ /and seidist þat god
 32 hym self is souereyn good / and þat god is fulle þe blysfulnesse for
 which þou yaue me as a couenable yift // þat it is to seyn þat no wyht
 nis blysful / but yif he be good also ther-with/ /and seidest ek that

¹ "the" a later insertion?² leaf 105, back.

e forme of good¹ is the substaunce of god² and of blysfulnesse // and
 idest þat thilke same oon is thilke same good / þat is requered and
 esired of alle the kynde of thynges / and thow ³prouedest in dis-
 tynges þat God gouerneth alle the thynges of þe worlde by the 4
 ouernement; of bowonte and seydyt þat alle thynges / wolen obeyen
 hym // and seydist þat the nature of yuel nis no thing / and thise
 ynges ne shewedist thou nat / with none resouns I-taken fro with-
 wte / but by proeues in cerelis and hoomlich knowen // the whiche 8
 roeues drawn to hem self hir feith and hyr a-cord euerich of hem
 f oother / thanne seide she thus / I ne scorne the nat / ne pleye /
 e desseyue the / but I. haue shewyd the / the thing þat is grettyst
 uer alle thynges by the yift of god / that we whilom preyeden // for 12
 his is the forme of the deuyne substaunce / þat is swich þat it ne
 lydeth nat in to owtterest foreyne thynges / ne ne resseiveth no
 traunge thynges in hym / but ryht as apermanides seide in grec of
 hilke deuyne substaunce / he seide thus / þat thilke deuyne sub- 16
 taunce tornith the world / and the moeuable cercle of thynges //
 whil thilke deuyne substaunce kepith it self / with owte moeuyng /
 nat is to seyn / þat it ne moeueþ neuer mo / and yit it moeueþ alle
 othre thynges / but natheles yif I haue styred resouns þat ne ben 20
 nat taken / fro with owte þe compas of thing of which we treten /
 out resouns þat ben by-stowed / with in þat compas / ther nis
 nat why þat thou sholdest merueylen / syn thou hast lerned by the
 sentense of plato / þat nedes the wordes moten ben cosyues to þe 24
 thynges of which they spekyn

¶ The .12. Metur [*Leaf 107, back, margin*]

Blysful is þat man þat may sen the clere welle of good / blys-
 ful is he þat may vnbyndyn hym fro the bondes of the
 heuy erthe // the poete of trace orpheus þat whilom hadde 28
 ryht gret sorwe for the deth of his wyf / After þat he hadde
 makid by his wepplly songes þe wodes moeuable to rennen / and
 hadde makyd the ryueres to stondyn styll / and hadde makyd the
 hertes & the hyndes to Ioignen dredeles hir sydes to cruwel lyouns / 32
 forto herknen his songe // and hadde makyd þat the hare was

¹ gloss: .i. boni.

² gloss: .i. dei.

³ leaf 106.

- nat agast of the hownde / whiche þat was plesid by his songe //
 So whan the moste ardent loue of his wif / brende the entayles
 of his brest/ /ne the songes þat hadden ouercomen alle thinges
 4 ne myhten nat asswagen hir lord orpheus / he pleynede hym of
 the heuene goodes þat weren crwel to hym / he wente hym to the
 howses of helle / and there he temprede hise blaundyssynge soonges /
 by resownynge strenges and spak and soonge in wepynge al þat euer
 8 he hadde resseyuyd / and laued owt of the noble welles of his modyr
 calyope the goddes // and he soonge with as mochel as myht of
 wepynge / and with as moche / as loue þat dowblede his sorwe myhte
 yeue hym and thechen hym / and he commoeued the helle and
 12 requerede / and by-sowhte by swete preyers / the lordes of sowles in
 helle / of relesinge / þat is to seyn to yilden hym his wif / Cerberus
 the porter of helle with hise thre heuedes was cawht and al a-bayst for
 16 the newe songe // and the thre goddesses / furijs / and vengeressis
 of felonies / þat tormenten and agasten the sowles by any / woxen
 sorful and sory and wepyn teeres for pite // tho ne was nat the
 heued of yxion I-tormented / by the ouerthrowinge wheel / and
 20 tatalus þat was destroyed by the woodnesse of longe thurst despisith
 the flodes to drynke / the fowl þat hihte voltor / þat etith the
 stomak or the gyser of ticius is so fulfyld of his song þat it nil etin
 ne tyren no more / At the laste the lord and Iuge of sowles was
 moeued to misericordes and cryde / we ben ouercomen quod he / yieue
 24 we to orpheus his wyf to bere hym compaignye / he hath wel
 I-bowht hir by his song / and his ditee / but we wol putte a lawe in
 this / and couenaunt in the yifte / þat is to seyn þat^s tyl he be owt
 of helle / yif he looke by-hynde hym / þat his wyf shal comen ayein
 28 vn to vs / but what is he þat may yieue a lawe to loueres / loue is a
 gret lawe and a strengere to hym self / than any lawe þat men may
 yeuen / allas whan orpheus and his wyf weren almost at the termis
 of þe nyht / þat is to seyn at the laste bowndes of helle / Orpheus
 32 lookede abacward on Erudice his wyf and loste hir / and was ded /
 /this fable apartienyth to yow alle / who so euere desireth or sekith
 to lede his thowht in to the souereyn day / þat is to seyn to clernessee

¹ leaf 108.

² second h later.

³ ? pat later.

of souereyn god / ffor who so þat euere be so ouercomen þat he
fychche hys eyen into the putte of helle / þat is to seyn who so sette
thowhtes in erthely thinges / al þat euere he hath drawn of the noble
good celestial / he lesith it whan he loketh the helles / þat is to seyn 4
in to lowe thinges of erthe /

Explicit liber .3.^m

Incipit liber quartus.

The I^a prose [*margin, leaf 109*]

WHan philosophie hadde songyn softly *and* delitably
the forseyde thinges / kepyng the dignite of hir
cheere / *and* the weyhte of hir wordes / .I. thanne 8
þat ne hadde nat al owterly foryetin the wepyng *and*
the Mowrnyng þat was set in Myn herte / ¹fforbrak the entencyon
of hir þat entendede yit to seyn some oothre thinges / O *quod* I thow
art gyderesse of verrey lyht / the thinges þat thow hast seid me / 12
hidir to ben so cleere to me *and* so shewyng by the deuyne lookyng
of hem / *and* by the resouns that thei ne mowen nat ben ouercomyn //
and thilke thinges þat þou toldest me / al be it so þat I hadde
whilom foryeten hem / for the sorwe of the wrong þat hath ben don 16
to me / yit natheles thei ne weeren nat al owterly vnknownen to me //
but this same is namely a ryht gret cause of my sorwe / so as the
gouernoure of thinges is good / yif þat yueles mowen ben by any
weyes / Or elles yif þat yueles passen with owte punyssinge // the 20
whiche thing only / how worthi it is to ben wondrid vp on //
thow considerist it wel thy self certeynly / but yit to this thing
ther is yit another thing I-Ioigned more to be wondryd vp on / ffor
felonye is imperisse *and* flowrith ful of Rycheesses / *and* vertu nis 24
nat al oonly with-owte needes / but it is cast vndyr / *and* fortroden
vndyr the feet of felonos folk / *and* it abieth the tormentz in
stide of wikkede felonis // of alle whiche thinges / ther nis no
wyht þat may merueylen ynowh / ne compleyne þat swiche thinges 28
ben doon in the regne of god þat alle thinges woot / *and* alle thinges
may / *and* ne wole nat but oonly good thinges / / thanne seide sho

¹ leaf 109, back.

thus/ /*Certes quod* she *pat* weere a gret meruayle / *and* an enbasshinge
with-owten ende/ /*and* wel moore horrible than al monstres/ /yif it
weere as thow weenest/ /*pat* is to seyn *pat* in the rith ordenee hows
4 of so mochel a fader *and* an ordenoure of meyne / *pat* the vesseles *pat*
ben fowle *and* vyl / sholden ben honoured and he heryed/ /*and* the
presious vesseles sholden ben defowled / *and* vyl / but it is nat so/ /for
yif tho thinges *pat* .I. haue concluded a lytel her by-forn ben kept
8 hoolle *and* vnaced / thow shalt wel knowe by the Autoryte of god / of
the whos regne I speke / *pat* certes the goode foolk¹ ben alwey myhty/
and shrewes ben alwey owt cast¹ *and* feble/ /ne the vices ne ben
neuer mo with-owte peyne / ne the vertuus ne ben nat¹ with-owte
12 mede/ /*and* *pat* blysfulnesses comyn alwey to goode folk/ /*and*
infortune comth alwey to wikkyd foolk / *and* thow shalt wel
knowe manye thinges of this kynde / *pat* shollen cesen thy
pleyntes / *and* strengthyn the with stidfast sadnesse / *and* for thow
16 hast seyn the forme of the verray blysfulnesse / by me *pat* haue
whilom shewid it the/ /*and* thow hast knowen in whom blysfulnesse
is I-set/ /alle thinges I tretim¹ *pat* I trowe ben necessa¹rye to putten
forth / I shal shewe the / the wey *pat* shal bryngen the ayein vn to
20 thin hows/ /*and* I shal fycchen fetheres in thi thowht / by whiche
it may areysen in heyhte / so *pat* alle tribulacyon ydon¹ a-wey / /thow
by my gydyng *and* by my paath *and* by my sledys shal mowe
retorne hool *and* sownd in to thi contree/ / /

The fyrste metur [margin, leaf 110, back]

24 **I** Haue forsothe swife fetheres *pat* surmounten the heyhte of
heuene/ /whan the swifte thowht hath clothid it self in tho
fetheres / it despiseth the hateful Erthes *and* surmountith the
Roundnesse of the grete ayr/ /*and* it seth the clowdes by-
28 hynde ²His bak / *and* passeth the heyhte of the regyon of the fyr /
pat eschaufeth by the swifte moeuynge of the fymament/ /til *pat* he
aroyseth hym in to the howses *pat* beren the sterres / *and* loyneth
his weyes with the sonne phebus/ /*and* felawshipith the wey of the
32 olde colde saturnis/ /*and* he ymaked a knyght of the clere sterre / *pat*
is to seyn *pat* the thowght is makyd goddes knyght by the sekynge of

¹ leaf 110.

² leaf 111.

trowthe to comyn to the verray knoleche of god/ *and* thilke thoght
renneth by the cercle of the sterres / in alle places *per* as the shynyng
nyht is painted/ *pat* is to seyn the nyht *pat* is clowdeles/ *ffor* on
nyhtes *pat* ben clowdeles it semeth as the heuene weere peyntyd with 4
diuerse ymages of sterres/ *and* whanne he hath Idoon there I-nowh
he shal forletyn the laste heuene / *and* he shal pressen and wyndyn
on the bak of the swifte firmament *and* he shal ben makid parfit of
worshipful lyht of god/ *ther* halt the lord of kynges the ceptre of 8
his myht / *and* a-tempreth the *gouernementus* of the world/ *and* the
shynyng Iuge of thinges stable in hymself *gouerneth* the swifte cart
or wayn *pat* is to seyn the circular moeuyng of the sonne/ *and* yif
thy wey ledith the ayein so *pat* thou be browht thider / thanne 12
wolthow seye / now *pat* / that is the contre *pat* thou requerest / *of*
which thou ne haddest no mynde/ *but* now it remenbryth me wel
her was .I. born/ *her* wol I fastne my degre her wole I dwelle / but
yif the liketh thanne to lokyn on the dyrknesses of the erthe / *pat* 16
thow hast forleten / thanne shalthow sen *pat* thise felonos tyrauntz
/ *pat* the wrecchede pople dredith now shollen ben exiled fro thilke
fayre contre/ / /

The 2^e prose [*margin, leaf 115*]

THan seyde I thus / owh I wondre me / *pat* *pou* bihetist me 20
so grete thinges / ne .I. ne dowte nat *pat* *pou* ne mayst wel
performe *pat* thou by-hetist/ *But* .I. preye the oonly this /
pat thou ne tarye nat to telle me thilke thinges / *pat*
thow hast moeued/ *ffyrst quod* she thou moost nedes knowen / *pat* 24
goode folk ben alwey stronge *and* myhty / *and* the shrewes ben feeble
and dishert *and* naked of alle strengthes/ *and* of thise thinges /
Certes euerich of hem is declared *and* shewid by other/ *for* so as
good *and* yuel ben two contraries / yif so be *pat* good be stidefast / 28
than sheweth the feblesse of yuel al opinly/ *and* yif *pou* knowe
clerly the frelenesse of yuel / the stidefastnesse of good is knowen/ //
but for as moche as the fey of my sentence shal be the more ferme
and haboundaunt / I wil gon by *pat* oo wey *and* by *pat* oother / *and* 32
I wole conferme the thinges *pat* ben purposed / now on this side /
and now on *pat* side/ /two thinges ther ben in whiche the effect of

alle the dedis of mankynde standith / þat is to seyn wil and power /
and yif þat oon of these two faylyth ther nis no thing þat may be
don / for yif þat wil lakkit / ther nis no wiht þat vndirtaketh to
4 don þat he wol nat don / and yif power fayleth / the wil nis but in
ydel and stant for nawht / and ther-of comht it þat yif thou see a
wiht þat wolde geten þat he may nat geten thou mayst nat dowten
þat power ne fayleth hym to hauen þat he wolde / this is opin and
8 cler quod I ne it ne may nat ben denoyed in no Manere / and yif þou see
a wyht quod she þat hath doon þat he wolde doon / þou nyht nat
dowten þat ne hath had power to doon it / no quod I / and in þat
that euery wyht may / in þat men may holden hym myhty / as who
12 seyth in so moche as man is myhty to doon a thing / in so mochel men
halt hym myhty / and in þat he ne may / in þat men demen hym to
ben feble // I confesse it wel quod I / Remenbrith the quod she þat I
haue gaddered / and shewed by forseide resouns þat al the entencion
16 of the wil of mankynde which that is lad by diuerse studies hasteth
to comen to blisfulnesse / it remenbrith me wel quod I þat it hath ben
shewed / and recordeth the nat thanne quod she þat blisfulnesse is
thilke same good þat men requeren / so þat whan blysfulnesse is re-
20 quered of alle / þat good also is requered and desired of alle / it ne
recordeth me nat quod I / for I haue it gretly alwey fichched in my
memorye / Alle folk thanne quod she goode and eke badde enforcen
hem with owte defference of entencion to comyn to good / this is a
24 verray consequence quod I / and certeyn is quod she / þat by the
getinge of good / ben men ymaked goode / this is certeyn quod I /
thanne getin goode men þat they desiren / So semeth it quod I / but
wikkede folk quod she yif they getyn the good þat they desiren /
28 they ne mowe nat be wikkede / so is it quod I / thanne so as þat oon /
and þat oother quod she desiren good / and the goode foolk getin
good / and nat the wikk' foolk / thanne nis it no dowte / þat the
goode foolk ne ben myhti and wikkede folk ben feeble / who so þat
32 euere quod I dowlth of this / he ne may nat considere the nature of
things ne the consequence of Resouns / and ouer this quod she / yif
þat ther be two thinges / þat han oo same purpose by kynde / and

þat oon of hem pursueth *and* parfo[r]meth thilke same thing by
naturel office / *and* þat oother ne may nat doon thilke naturel office /
by folwith by other manere / thanne is *conuenable* to nature hym þat
¹A-complesseth his purpos kyndeli / *and* yit he ne Acomplesseth nat 4
his owne purpos / wheyther of thise two demestow for moore myhty/
/yif þat I coniecte *quod* I þat þou wolt seye / algates yit I desire to
herkne it more pleylny of the / /thow nylt nat thanne denoye *quod*
she þat the Moeuement of goyng ne in Men by kynde / /no forsothe 8
quod I / /ne þou ne dowtest nat *quod* she þat thilke naturel office of
goyng ne be the the office of feet² / /I ne dowte it nat *quod* I / /thanne
quod she yif þat a wyht be myhty to moeue *and* goth vp on hise feet /
and another to whom thilke naturel office of feet lakketh enforceth 12
hym to goon crepinge vp on hise handes / /which of thise two owhte
to ben holden the Moore myhty by ryht / /knyt³ forth the remenaunt
quod I / for no wyht ne dowlth þat he þat may gon by naturel
office of feet / ne be moore myhty / than he þat ne may nat / /but the 16
souereyn good *quod* she / þat is eueneliche purposed to þe good folk
and to badde / the goode folk sekyn it by naturel office of vertuus/
/ *and* the shrewis enforcen hem to geten it by diuerse coueytise of
ertheli thinges / /which þat nis no naturel office to getin thilke same 20
souereyn good / trowestow þat it be any other whise / nay *quod* I /
for the consequence is opyn *and* shewing of thinges þat I haue
graunted / þat nedes goode folk moten ben myhty / *and* shrewes
feeble *and* vnmyhty / /thow rennist a ryht by-forn me *quod* she / *and* 24
this is the Iugement þat is to seyn / /I Iuge of the ryht as thise leches
ben wont to hopyn of sike folk / whan they aperceyuen þat nature is
redressed / *and* withstondith to the maledie / but for I se the now
al redi to the vndirstondinge / /I shal shewe the moore thikke *and* 28
continuel resouns / ffor loke now how gretly shewith the feblesse *and*
infirmite of wikkede folk þat ne mowen nat comyn to þat hir naturel
entenciun ledith hem / *and* yit almost thilke naturel entencion
constreynith / *and* what weere to demen thanne of shrewes / yif thilke 32
naturel help hadde forletin hem / /the which naturel help of enten-
cion goth a-wey by-forn hem / *and* is so gret þat vnnethe it may

¹ leaf 116.

² gloss: .i. pedum.

³ gloss: .i. contexe.

⁴ leaf 116, back.

ben ouercome/ /considere thanne how gret deffaute of power and how
gret feblesse ther is in wikkede felonos folk/ /as who seyth the gretter
thing þat is coueyted / and the desire nat acomplised / of the lasse
4 myht is he þat coueyteth it and may nat acomplisse/ /and forþi
philosophie seyth thus by souereyn good/ /ne shrewes ne requeren nat
lyhte meedis ne veyn games / whiche they ne may folwen ne holden /
but they faylen of thilke somme and of the heyhte of thinges / þat
8 is to seyn souereyn good/ /ne thise wrechches ne comyn nat to the
effect of souereyn good / the which they enforcen hem oonly to geten /
by nyhtes and by dayes/ /in the getinge of which good the strengthe
of good folk¹ is ful wel ysene/ /for ryht so as thow myhtest demen
12 hym myhty of goinge þat goth on his feet / tyl he myhte come to
thilke place fro the whiche place ther ne laye no wey forthere to ben
gon / ryht so most thow nedes demen hym for ryht myhty þat getith
and ateynith to the ende of alle thinges þat ben to desired / by-yonde
16 the whiche ende ther nis nothing to desire/ /of the which power of
good folk¹ men may conclude þat the wikked men semen to be
bareyne and naked of alle strengthe/ /ffor whi forletyn they vertus
and folwen vices / nis it nat for þat they ne knowen nat¹ the goodes /
20 but what thing is moore feeble and more caytyf thanne is the blynd-
nesse of ignoraunce/ /or elles they knowen ful wel whiche thinges þat
they owhten folwe / but lecherie and coueytise ouerthrowith hem
mys-torned/ /and certys so doth distemperaunce to feeble men þat ne
24 mowen nat wrastlen ayenis the vices/ /ne knowen they nat thanne /
wel þat thei forletyn the good wilfully / and tornen hem wilfully
to vices/ /and in this wyse they ne forletyn nat oonly to ben
myhty / but they forletyn al owtrely in any whise for to ben/
28 /ffor they þat forletyn the comune fyn of alle thinges þat ben/
/they¹ forletyn also ther-with-al for to ben / and per auenture it
sholde semen to som folk¹ þat this weere a merveyle to seyen / þat
shrewes whiche þat contienen the Moore partye of men / ne ben nat
32 ne han no beynge/ /but natheles it is so / and thus stant this thing/
/for thei þat ben shrewes / I denoye nat þat they ben shrewes / but
I denoye and seye sympeli and pleynly þat thei ne ben nat / ne han no

¹ leaf 117.

ynge/ /ffor ryht as thow myhtest seyn of the carayne of a man /
 t it weere a ded man / but thow ne myhtest nat symplely callen it
 man/ /So graunte I wel forsothe þat visious folk¹ ben wikked / but
 ne may nat graunten absolutly *and* symplely / þat they ben/ /for 4
 ilke thing þat withholdeth ordre *and* kepith nature / thilke thing
and hath beynge/ / but what thing þat fayleth of þat / þat is to
 yn þat he forletith naturel ordre he forletith thilke beinge þat is set
 his nature/ /but thow wolt seyn þat shrewen mowen/ /Certes þat 8
 denoye I nat / but certes hyr power ne dessendit nat of strengthe /
 t of feeblesse/ /ffor thei mowen don wikkednesses / the whiche
 ey ne myhte nat don yif they myhten dwellin in the forme *and* in
 a doynge of good folk/ /*and* thilke power shewith ful evidently þat 12
 ey ne mowen ryht nawht/ /ffor so as I haue gadered *and* proeued a
 el her byforn þat yuel is nawht / *and* so as shrewes mowen oonly
 t shrewednesses/ /this conclusion is al cleer þat shrewes ne mowen
 ht nawht ne han no power/ /*and* for as moche as þou vndirstonde / 16
 rich is the strengthe of this power of shrewes / I haue diffinissed a
 el her by-forn / þat nothing is so myhty as souereyn good/ /þat is
 h *quod* I/ /*and* thilke same souereyn good may don non yuel//
 rtes no *quod* I/ /is ther any wyht thanne *quod* she þat weneth 20
 t men mowen doon alle thinges/ /no man *quod* I/ /but he be owte
 his witte/ /but certes shrewes mowen don yuel *quod* she/ /ye wolde
 d *quod* I that ¹they myhten don non/ /thanne *quod* she so as he
 t is myhty to doon oonly but goode thinges may don alle thinges / 24
 d they þat ben myhty to don yuele thinges ne mowen nat alle
 inges / thanne is it opyn thing *and* manifest / þat they þat mowen
 n yuel ben of lasse power/ /*and* yit to proeue this conclusion ther
 lpeth me this þat I haue Ishewed her by-forn/ /þat alle power is to 28
 nowmbryd among thinges þat men owhten requere/ /And I haue
 ewid þat alle thinges þat owhten ben desired ben referred to good
 ht as to a manere heyhte of hir nature/ /but for to Mowen don yuel
 d felonie ne may nat ben referred to good/ /thanne nis nat yuel of 32
 e nowmbyr of thinges þat owhte ben desired/ /but alle power owhte
 n desired *and* requered / than is it opyn *and* cler þat the power ne

¹ leaf 117, back.

the Mowing of shrewes nis no power / *and* of alle thise thinges it
 sheweth wel þat the goode folk ben certeynly myhty *and* the shrewes
 dowtales ben vnmyhty / / *and* it is cler *and* opyn þat thilke sentence
 4 of plato is verray *and* soth / þat seyth þat oonly wyse men may doon
 þat they desiren / / *and* shrewes mowen hawnten þat hem liketh / /but
 þat they desiren þat is to seyn to comyn to souereyn good / they ne
 han no power to a-complissen þat / /for shrewes don þat hem lyst /
 8 whan by the thinges in which they deliten / they wenen to ateyne to
 thilke good þat they desyren / /but they ne getyn ne ateynen nat
 ther to / for vices ne comyn nat blysfulnesse / /

The 2^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 118]

12 **W** Ho so þat the couertoures of hir veyn aparayles myhte
 strepyng of thise prowde kynges / þat þou seest sitten
 on heygh on hir charyes glyteringe in shynynge purple /
 enuyrowned with sorwful armures / Manassinge with
 crwel Mowth / blowinge by woodnesse of herte / /he sholde seen
 16 thanne þat thilke lordes beren with-inne hyr corages ful streyte
 cheynes / /for lecherie tormentith hem in þat oon syde with gredy
 venymys / *and* trowblable Ire þat arayseth in hym the floodes of
 trwbynges tormentith vp on þat oother side hyr thowht / /Or sorwe
 20 halt hym weery *and* y-kawht / or slidinge *and* deceyuyng hope
 tormentith hem / *and* therfore syn þou seest oon heed / þat is to seyn
 oon tyraunt beeren so manye tyranyes / thanne ne doth thilke tyraunt
 nat that he desireth / syn he is cast down with so manye wikkede
 24 lordes / þat is to seyn with so manye vices þat han so wikkedly
 lordshippes ouer hym / /

¶ The iiij^{de} prose [margin, leaf 120]

28 **S** Estow nat thanne in how gret fylthe thise shrewes ben
 ywrappyd / *and* with which cleernesse thise good folk shynen /
 /In this sheweth it wel / þat to goode folk ne lakketh neuer
 mo hir meedes / ne shrewes lakken neuer mo torment / /for
 of alle thinges þat ben ydoon / thilke thing for which any thing is
 don / it semyth as by Ryht þat thilke thing be the Meede of þat / /as

thus yif a man renneth in the stadie or in the forlong for the corone /
thanne lith the Meede in the corone for which he renneth/ /and I
haue shewed þat blysfulnesse is thilke same good / for which þat alle
things ben doon / thanne is thilke same good purposed to the workes 4
of mankynde ryht as a comune meede which meede ne may ben
desseyuered fro good folk/ for no wiht as by Ryht fro thennes forth
þat hym lakketh goodnesse / ne shal ben clepyd good/ /ffor which
thing folk of goode maneres hir meedes ne forsaken hem ¹neuer mo/ 8
/ffor al be it so þat shrewes wexen as woode as hem list ayenis goode
folk / yit neuer the leese the corone of wyse men shal nat fallen ne
faaden / for foreyne shrewednesse ne by-nymyth nat fro the corages of
goode folk/ hir propre honour / but yif þat any wiht reioyse hym of 12
goodnesse þat he hadde taken fro with owte / as who seyht yif þat any
wiht hadde his goodnesse of any oother man than of hym self / certes
he þat yaf hym thilke goodnesse / or elles som oother wyht myhte
be-nyme it hym/ /but for as moche as to euery wyht his owne propre 16
bownte yeueth hym his Meede / thanne at erst shal he faylen of Meede
whan he forletith to ben good/ /and at the last so as alle Meedes ben
requered for men weenen þat they ben goode / who is he þat nolde
deme / þat he that is ryht myhty of good weere part-les of the Meede/ 20
/and of what Meede shal he be gerdoned / certes of ryht fayre Meede
and ryht grete a-bouen alle Meedes/ /remenbre the of thilke noble
corolarye / þat I yat the a litel her byforn / and gadere it to-gidere
in this manere/ /so as good hym self² his blisfulnesse / thanne is it 24
cleer and certeyn þat alle good folk ben maked blysful for they ben
goode/ /and thilke folk þat ben blysful it a-cordeth and is couenable
to ben goddes/ /thanne is the Meede of goode folk swich þat no day
shal enpeyren it / ne no wikkednesse ne shal derken it / ne power of 28
no wyht ne shal nat amenusen it / þat is to seyn to ben maked
goddes/ /and syn it is thus þat goode Men ne faylen neuer mo of hir
Meede / Certes no wysman ne may dowte of vndepartable payne of
the shrewes / þat is to seyn that the payne of shrewes ne departeth 32
nat from hem self neuer Mo / ffor so as goode and yuel and payne
and Meedes ben contrarye / it mot nedes ben that Ryht as we seen by-

¹ leaf 120, back.

² gloss: .i. ipsum bouum.

tyden in gerdown ¹of goode / þat also mot the peyne of yuel answery
 by contrarye party to shrewes/ /Now thanne so as bownte *and* prowesse
 ben the Meede to goode foolke / Also is shrewednesse it self torment to
 4 shrewes/ /thanne who so þat euer is entechched *and* defowled with
 yuel / yif shrewes thanne wolen preysen hem self / may it semen to
 hem / þat they ben / *with* owten party of torment / syn they ben
 swiche þat the vtteriste wikkednesse / þat is to seyn wikkede thewes² /
 8 which þat is the owttereste *and* the worste kynde of shrewednesse
 ne defowleth ne entechcheth nat hem oonly but infecteth *and*
 enuonymeth hem gretly/ /*and* also looke on shrewes þat ben the
 contrarye party of goode Men / how gret peyne felawshipith *and*
 12 folueth hem / for þou hast lerned a lytel her by forn / þat alle thing þat
 is *and* hath beyng is oon / *and* thilke same oon is good / thanne is
 this the consequence / þat it semyth wel / þat alle þat is *and* hath
 beyng is good / this is to seyn as who seyth þat beyng *and* vnite
 16 *and* goodnesse is al oon / *and* in this manere it folweth thanne þat
 alle thing þat fayleth to ben good it styntyth forto be *and* forto
 han any beyng/ /wherfore³ it is / þat shrewes styntyn forto ben þat
 they weeren/ /but thilke oother forme of mankynde / þat is to seyn
 20 the forme of the body *with*-owte sheweth yit that thise shrewes
 weeren whilom men / wher-for whan they ben peruerted *and* torned
 in to Malice / certes than han they forlorn the nature of mankynde/
 /but so oonly bownte *and* prowesse may enhawsen euery man ouer
 24 oother men / thanne mot it nedes be þat shrewes which þat shrewed-
 nesse hath cast owt of the condicion of mankynde / ben put vnder
 the mer[i]tte *and* the desert of men/ /thanne bytydeth it / þat yif þou
 seest a wyht þat be tranformed in to vices / thou ne mayst nat weene
 28 þat he be a man/ /ffor yif he be ardaunt in aueryce / *and* þat he be a
 rauaynour / by vyolence of foreyne rychesse / thou shalt ⁴seyn þat he
 is lyke to the wolf/ /*and* yif he be felonows *and* *with*-owte reste *and*
 excersise his tonge to chidinges / þou shalt lykkne hym to the hownd//
 32 *and* yif he be a preuey awaytor I-hidd *and* reioyseth hym to Rauysse
 by whiles / þou shalt seyn hym lyke to the fox whelpes/ /*and* yif he be
 distempre *and* quakith for Ire / men shal weene þat he bereth the corage

¹ leaf 121

² gloss: .i. condicions.

³ gloss: quo fit.

⁴ leaf 121 back.

lyon/ /and yif he be dredful and fleynge and dredith thinges þat
owhten nat to ben dredd / men shal holden hym lyk to the hert/
d yif he be slowh and astonyd and lache he lyuyth as an asse/ /and
he be lith and vnstidefast of corage and chaungith ay hise studies / 4
is lykned to bryddes/ /and yif he be plownged in fowle and
elene luxuris / he is withholden in the fowle delices of the fowle
re/ /thanne folueth it þat he þat forletith bownte and prowess / he
letith to ben a man/ /syn he may nat passen in to the condicion 8
god he is torned in to a best/ / /

¶ The 3^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 122, back]

EVrus the wynde aryuede the sayles of vlixes duc of the
contre of narice and his wandrynge shippes by the sec/ / in
to the Ile there as Circes / the fayre goddesse / dowhter of 12
the sonne dwellith / þat medleth to hire newe gastes / drynkes
ben towched and maked with enchauntemenz/ /and after þat hir
id myhty ouer the herbes hadde chaunged hir gastes in to diuerse
neres / þat oon of hem is couered his face with forme of a boere / 16
oother is chaunged in to a lyoun of the contre of marmorike /
l hise nayles and hise teth wexen/ /þat oother of hem is neweliche
unged in to a wolf / and howleth whan he wolde wepe / þat oother
h debonayrely in the hows as a tygre of Inde/ / but al be it so þat 20
godhed of Mercurie / þat is clepid the bryd of archadie / hath had
rcy of the duke vlixes / bisegyd with diuerse yueles/ /and hath
cownded hym fro the pestelence of his oostesse / algates the Roweres
l the maryneres hadden by this I-drawn in to hir Mowthes and 24
nken the wikkede drynkes/ /they that weeren wexen swyn /
lden by this Ichaunged hir mete of bred/ /forto eten akkornes of
es/ /non of hir lemes ne dwelleth with hem hool / but they han
t the voyce and the body/ /oonly hyr thowht dwelleth with hem 28
ble / þat weepith & byweyleth the Monstruos chaun'gyng þat they
fren/ /O ouer lyht hand / as who seyth / O feble and lyht is the
nd of circes the enchaunteresse / þat chaungeth the bodies of folkys
to bestys to regard and to comparisoun of Mutasion þat is maked 32

by vices/ /ne the herbis of cirtes ne ben nat myhty / for al be it so
 þat they may chaungen the lymes of the body / algates yit they may
 nat chaunge the hertes/ /ffor *with-inne* is Ihydd the strengthe *and*
 4 vigor of men / in the secre toure of hir hertes / þat is to seyn the
 strengthe of reson/ /but thilke venyms of vices to-drawen a man to
 hem moore myhtyly than the venym of cirtes/ /ffor vices ben so cruel
 þat they percen *and* thorw passen the corage *with Inne/ and* thogh
 8 they ne anoye nat the body / yit vices wooden to destroyen men by
 wownde of thowht.

¶ The ferthe prose [margin, leaf 127]

12 **T**Han seyde I thus / I confesse *and* am a-knowe it *quod* I / ne
 I ne se nat / þat men may sayn as by ryht þat shrewes ne
 ben chaunged in to bestis by the qualyte of hyr sowles / al
 be it so þat they kepyn yit the forme of the body of man-
 kynde/ /but I nolde nat of shrewes of whiche the thowht cruel
 woodeth alwey in to destruccion/ of goode men / þat it weere leueful
 16 to hem to don þat/ /Certes *quod* she ne it nys nat leueful to hem /
 1As I shal wel shewe the in couenabele place / but natheles yif so
 weere þat thilke þat men weenen be leueful to shrewes weere by-
 nomen hem so þat they ne myhte nat anoyen or doon harm to goode
 20 men / Certes a gret partye of the peyne to shrewes sholde ben allegged
and releued for al be it so þat this ne seme nat credible thing¹ per
 auenture to some folk / yit moot it nedes be / þat shrewes ben moore
 wrechches *and* vnsely whan they may doon *and* performe þat they
 24 coueyten / than yif they myhte nat complyssen þat they coueyten/
 / ffor yif so be þat it be wrechchednesse to wylne to don yuel / than
 is moore wrechchednesse to Mowen doon yuel / *with* owte whiche
 mowyng the wrechched wil sholde languagesse *with* owte effect/ /than
 28 syn þat eueryche of thise thinges hath his wrechchednesse / þat is to
 seyn / wyl to doon yuel / *and* Mowyng to don yuel / it mot nedes
 be þat they ben constreynyd / by the vnselynesses / þat woolen *and*
 Mowen *and* performen felonyes *and* shrewednesses / I acorde me *quod*
 32 I / but I desire gretly þat shrewes losten sone thilke vnselynysses /

¹ leaf 127, back.

to seyn þat shrewes weeren despoyled of mowynge to don yuel/
 hullen they *quod* she / sonnere per auenture than thou woldest /
 nere than they hem self weene / for ther nis no thing so late
 short bowndes of this lyf / þat is long to a-byde / namelyche 4
 rage in-mortel / of whiche shrewes / the grete hope *and* the
 compassinges of shrewednesses / is ofte destroyed by a sodeyn
 r they ben war/ *and* þat thing establyth to shrewes the ende of
 shrewednesse/ /for yif þat shrewednesse maketh wrechches / 8
 not he nedes ben most wrechched þat lengest is a shrewe / the
 ewikked shrewes wolde I demen aldermost vnsely *and* caytyfs /
 at hir shrewednesse ne weere fynysched at the leste wey / by
 tteryste deth/ /ffor yif I haue concluded soth of the vnselynesse 12
 shrewednesse / than shewith it cleerly þat thilke wrechchednesse is
 owten ende the whiche is certeyn to ben perdurable/ /Certes
 I this conclusion is hard *and* wondirful to graunte/ /but I
 wel þat it a-cordeth moche to the thinges þat I haue graunted 16
 y-for/ /thow hast *quod* she the ryht estimacion of this/ /but
 o euer weene þat it be an hard thing to a-corde hym to a con-
 d / it is ryht þat he shewe / þat some of the premysses ben
 or elles he moot shewe þat the collacions of proposicions nis 20
 edful to a necessarye conclusion/ *and* yif it ne be nat so / but
 o premyssys ben ygraunted / ther nis not² why he sholde blame
 yument / for this thing that I shal telle the now ne shal nas
 lasse wondyrful/ /but of the thinges that ben taken also it it 24
 aye / as ho³ seyth it folweth of that which that is purposed
 1/ /what is that *quod* I/ /Certes *quod* she that is that thise
 d shrewes ben moore blyful or elles lasse wrechches þat a-byen
 ment; that they han deseruyd / than yif no payne of Iustice 28
 stysede hem / ne this ne seye I nat now / for that any man
 thinke / þat the maners of shrewes ben coriged *and* chastised
 nyaunce / *and* that they ben browht to the ryht wey by the
 of the torment / ne for that they yeuen to oother folk ensaumple 32
 1 fro vices/ /but I vnderstande yif in a nother manere / þat
 s ben moore vnsely whan they ne ben nat punyssed / al be it

¹ leaf 123.

^{2, 3} not, *ho*, overline : by a corrector.

so þat ther ne be had no reson or lawe of correccyon / ne non en-
 saumple of lookynge/ /and what manere shal that ben quod I / oother
 than hath be told her by-forn/ /haue we nat thanne graunted quod
 4 she / þat goode folk ben blysfyl and shrewes ben wrechches/ /yis
 quod I/ /thanne quod she yif þat any good weere added to the
 wrechchednesse of any wyht / nis he nat moore weleful than he þat
 ne hath no Medlynge of good in his solitarie wrechchednesse/ /So
 8 semyth it quod /I./ and what seystow thanne quod she of thilke
 wrechche þat lakked alle goodes / so þat no 'good nis medlyd in hijs
 wrechchednesse / and yit ouer al his wykkednesse for which he is a
 wrechche þat ther be yit a nother yuel anexed and knytte to hym//
 12 shal nat men demen hym more vnsely / than thilke wrechche of
 whiche the vnselynesse is releued by the partycipacion of som good//
 whi sholde he nat quod I/ /thanne certes quod she hau shrewes whan
 they ben punysshed / som what of good anexed to hyr wrechchednesse/
 16 that is to seyn the same peyne þat they suffryn / which þat is good
 by the reson of Iustyce // and whan thilke same shrewes ascapyn with-
 owte torment / than han they som what moore of yuel / yit ouer the
 wykkednesse that they han don / þat is to seyn defaute of peyne /
 20 which defaute of peyne thow hast graunted is yuel / for the deserte
 of felonye/ /I. ne may nat denye it quod I/ /Moche moore thanne
 quod she ben shrewes vnsely whan they ben wrongfully delyueryd
 fro peyne / than whan they ben punysshed by ryhtful venyaunce/ /but
 24 this is opyn thyng and cler þat it is ryht / þat shrewes ben punysshed/
 and it is wykkednesse and wrong þat they escapyn vnpunysshed//
 who myhte deneye þat quod I/ /but quod she may any man denye þat
 al that is ryht nis good / and also the contrarye / þat al that is wrong
 28 is wykke/ /Certes quod I thise thinges ben cleere I-nowh / and þat we
 han concludyd alyter her byforn/ /but I preye the þat thow telle me
 yif þou acordest to leten no torment to sowles after þat the body is
 endyd by the deth/ /this is to seyn vndirstandystow awht þat sowles
 32 han any torment after the deth of the body/ /Certes quod she yee /
 and þat ryht gret / of whiche sowles quod she / I trowe þat some be
 tormentyd / by asprenesse of peyne / and some sowles I trowe be

exercised / by apurgyng mekenesse/ /but my conseyl nis nat to
determenye of this peynes / but I haue trauallyd *and* told / yit hider-
to / for thow sholdest knowe / þat the Mowynge¹ of shrewes / which
Mowynge the semyth to ben vnworthy ²nis no mowynge / *and* ek of ⁴
shrewes of which þou pleynedyst þat they ne weere nat punysshed /
þat þou woldest seyn / þat they ne weeren neuer mo with-owten the
tormentz of hyr wykkednesse / *and* of the licence of Mowynge to don
yuel / þat thow preydynt þat it myhte sone ben endyd / *and* þat þou ⁸
woldest fayn lerne þat it ne sholde nat longe dure / *and* þat shrewes
ben Moore vnsely yif they weere of lengere duryng / *and* most
vnsely yif they weeryn perdurable/ *and* after this I haue shewed the
þat moore vnsely ben shrewes / whan they escapyn with-owte hir ¹²
ryhtful payne / than whan they ben punysshed by ryhtful venyaunce/
/ *and* of this sentence folweth it that thanne ben shrewes constreynyd
at the laste with most greuous torment / whan men weene that they
ne be nat punysshed / whan I considere thy resoun *quod* I / I ne ¹⁶
trowe nat þat men seyn any thing moore verayly/ / *and* yif I torne a-
yeyn to the studyes of men who is he to whom it sholde seme þat he
ne sholde nat oonly leuen thise thinges / but ek gladly herkne hem/
/ *Certes quod* she so it is / but men may nat / for they han hire Eyen ²⁰
so wont to the derknesse of erthely thinges / þat they ne may nat
lyften hem vp to the lyht of cleer sothfastnesse / but they ben lyke to
bryddes of which the nyht lyhtneth hir lookynge / *and* the day
blyndeth hem/ /for whan men lookyn nat the ordre of thinges / but ²⁴
hir lustis *and* talentz / they weene þat eyther the leue or the Mowynge
to don wykkednesse or elles the schapyng with-owte payne be
waleful/ /but considere the Iugement of the perdurable lawe / for yif
þou conferme thy corage to the beste thinges / þou ne hast no nede ²⁸
of no Iuge to yeuen the prys or mede/ /for thow hast Ioyned thy self
to the moost excellent thing / *and* yif thow haue enclyned thy
studyes to the wykked thinges / ne sek' no foreyne wrekers owt of
thy self / for thow thy self / hast thurst thy self in to wikke ³²things
/ *Ryht* as thow myhtest loken the fowle erthe by diuerse tymes / *and*
the heuene / *and* þat alle other thinges stynten fro with owte / so þat

¹ gloss: .i. myght.² leaf 129.³ leaf 129, back.

thow nere neyther in heuenene ne in erthe / ne saye no thing moore /
 than sholde it semen to the as by oonly resoun of lookynge / þat
 thow weere now in the sterres / and now in the erthe / but the poeple
 4 ne lookyth nat in thise thinges / what thanne / shal we thanne
 aprochen vs to hem þat I haue shewyd þat they ben lyk to bestys¹ /
 and what woltow seyn of this / yif þat a man hadde al for-lorn his
 syhte and hadde foryetyn þat he euer sawh / and wende þat nothing
 8 ne faylede hym of perfeccion of mankynde / now we þat myhten sen
 the same thinges / wolde we nat weene þat he weere blynde² / ne also
 ne acordith nat the poeple to þat I shal seyn / the which thing
 sustenyd by a stronge fowndement of resouns / þat is to seyn that
 12 moore vnseely ben they þat don wrong to oothre folk / than they þat
 the wrong suffren / I wolde heren thylke same resouns quod I /
 denyestow quod she þat alle shrewes ne ben worthy to han torment
 // nay quod I / but quod she I am certeyn by many resouns þat
 16 shrewes ben vnseely / it acordith quod I / thanne ne dowtestow nat
 quod she / þat thilke folk þat ben worthi of torment þat they ne ben
 wrechches / it a-cordeth wel quod I / yif thow weere thanne yset a
 Iuge or a knowers of thinges / trowestow þat men sholden tormenten
 20 hym / þat hath don the wrong / or elles hym þat hath suffred the
 wrong / I ne dowte nat quod I þat I nolde don satisfaccion to hym
 þat hadde suffred the wrong / by the sorwe of hym that hadden don
 the wrong / thanne semyth it quod she þat the doere of wrong is
 24 moore wrechche / þat he þat suffred wrong / that folweth wel quod
 I / than quod she by thise causes and by othre causes þat ben of
 enforced by the same Roote / fylthe or synne by the propre nature of
 it maketh men wrechches / and it sheweth wel / þat the wrong that
 28 men don nis nat the wrechchednesse of hym þat resseyuyth the
 wrong / but certes quod she thise oratours or aduocat3 don al the
 contrarye / for they enforcen hem to commoeue the Iuges to han pite
 of hem þat han suffred / and resseyued the thinges þat ben greuous
 32 and aspre / and yit men sholden moore ryhtfully han pite of hem þat
 don the greuaunces and the wronges / the whiche shrewes it weere a
 moore couenable thing / that the accusours or aduocat3 / nat wroth

¹ overline gloss : quod dicitur (or quasi dicat) non. ² gloss : q. d. sic. ³ leaf 136.

pitous and debonayre ledden tho shrewes þat han don wrong to
 a Iugement / ryht as men ledyn syke folk to the leche / for þat
 ey sholden seken owt the maladies of synne by torment/ /and by
 is couenaunt ether the entente of deffendours or aduokat; sholde 4
 yle and cesen in al / or elles yif the office of aduocat; wolde better
 cofyten to men it sholde ben torned in to the habite of accusacion /
 it is to seyn they sholden accuse shrewes / and nat excuse hem
 and ek the shrewes hem self yif it weere leueful to hem to sen at any 8
 yfte the vertu that they han forleten / and sawh that they sholden
 atten adown the felthes of hir vices / by the torment; of peynes /
 ey ne owhte nat ryht for the recompensacyon for to geten hem
 wnte and prowessse which þat they han lost/ demen ne holden þat 12
 ilke peynes weeren torment; to hem/ /and ek they wolden refuse
 e attendaunce of hir aduocat; / and taken hem self to hyr Iuges /
 d to hir accusors/ /ffor which it bytidith / þat as to the wyse folk
 ar nis no place fleten to hate / þat is to seyn that ne hate hath no 16
 ce amonges wyse men/ /for no wyht nyl haten goode men / but yif
 weere ouer mochel a fool/ /and for to haten shrewes / it nis no reson /
 : ryht so as langwissynges is maledye of body ryht so ben vices
 d synne maledye of corage/ /and so as we ne deme nat þat they 20
 t ben syke of hir body / ben worthy to ben hated / but rather
 orthy of pyte / wel ¹Moore worthi nat to ben hated / but for to ben
 d in pite / ben they of whiche the thowhtes ben constreynyd by
 onows wykkednesse / þat is moore cruwel than any langwyssyng 24
 body /

¶ The ferthe Metur [*margin, leaf 130, back*]

WHat deliteth yow to exciten so grete Moeuynges of
 hateredes / and to hasten and bysyen the fatal dis-
 posicion of yowre deth with yowre propre handes / þat
 is to seyn by batayles or by kontek/ /ffor yif ye axen 28
 e deth / it hasteth hym of his owne wyl / ne deth ne taryeth nat his
 rifte hors² / and the men þat the serpent and the lyown and þe tygre /
 and the beere / and the boor seken to slen with hir teth/ /yit thilke

¹ leaf 130, back.

² gloss : .i. disposiciones odii.

same men seken to slen euerych of hem oother / with swerd / lo for
 hir maneres ben diuerse and descordaunt / ¹they moeuen vnryhtful
 oostes and crwel batayles / and wylnen to perise by entrechaungynges
 4 of dartes / but the resoun of crwelte nis nat I-nowgh ryhtful / wiltow
 thanne yelden² a couenable gerdoun to the desertes of men / Love
 ryhtfully goode folk and haue pite on shrewes /

¶ The fyfthe prose [margin, leaf 131, back]

8 **T**Husse I wel quod I / eyther what blysfulnesse / or elles³ what
 vnselynesse is establyssed in the desertes of goode men / and
 of shrewes / but in this ilke fortune of poeple I se somewhat
 of good / and somewhat of yuel / ffor no wyse man hath
 leuere ben exiled / poore / and nedy / and nameles / than for to
 12 dwellen in his Cyte and flowren of Rychesses / and be redowtable by
 honour / and strong of power / for in this wyse more clerly / &
 more wytnessefully is the office of wyse men I-treted / whan the
 blysfulnesse and the powste of gouernours is / as it weere I-shadd
 16 amonges poeples / pat be nesshebers and subgitz / syn pat namely
 prysoun lawe / and thise oothre tormentz / of laweful peynes / ben
 rather owed to felonos citezeins / for the whiche felonos cetezeins /
 tho peynes ben establysshed than for good folk / thanne I meruayle
 20 me gretly quod I / why pat the thinges ben so mys entrechaunged /
 pat tormentz of felonyes pressen and confownden goode folk / and
 shrewes rauyssheden medes of vertu and ben in honours and in grete
 estat / and I desire ek for to weten of the what semyth the to ben
 24 the resoun of this so wrongful a conclusion / for I wolde wondre we
 the lasse yif I trowede pat al thise thinges / weeren medled by
 fortounous happe / but now hepyth and encresith myn astonyenge /
 /God / gouernour of thinges / pat so as god yeueth ofte tymes to
 28 goode men goodes and myrthes / and to shrewes yuelis and aspre
 thinges / and yeueth ayeinward to goode folk hardneses and to
 shrewes he grauntyth hym hir wyl / and pat they desiren / what
 defference thanne may ther be by-twixen pat pat god doth / and pe
 32 happe of fortune / yif men ne knowe nat the cause why pat it is / me

¹ leaf 131.

^{2,3} Yelden, elles, *interlined by corrector.*

⁴ leaf 132. (The z of cetezeins is the z of tormentz, &c.)

is no Merueyle *quod* she thowhg / þat men wenen þat ther be
 what folyssh and confuse / whan the reson of the ordre is
 rowe / but al thogh þat þou ne knowe nat the cause of so gret a
 osicion / natheles for as moche as god the goode gouernour 4
 uprith and gouernith the world / ne dowte the nat þat alle
 ges ben doon a ryht.

¶ The fyfthe Metur [margin, leaf 132, back].

W Ho so þat ne knowe nat the sterres of arctour / I-torned
 neygh to the souereyn contre or poynt / þat is to seyn 8
 I-torned nygh to the souereyn pool of the fyrmament//
 and wot nat why the sterre boetes passeth or gaderith
 weyues / and drencheth his late flambes in the see / and whi þat
 tes the sterre vnfoldith his ouerswifte arsynges / thanne shal he 12
 dryn of the lawe of the heye eyr¹ / and ek yif þat he ne knowe nat
 þat the hornes of the fulle Moene wexen paale and Infect by
 ndes ²of the derke nyht³ / and how the Moene dyrk and confuse
 ouereth the sterres / þat she⁴ hadde Icouered by hir cleere visage/ 16
 comune erreure moeueth folk and makyt weery hyr basynnes of
 by thilke strokes / þat is to seyn that ther is a manere of poeple
 bihte coribandes þat weenen þat whan the moene is in the eclypse /
 it be enchauntyd / and therefore for to rescowe the moene they 20
 yn hyr basyns with thilke strokes / ne no man ne wondrith whan
 blases of þe wynd chorus beten the strondes of the see / by
 kynge floodes / ne no manne wondrith whan the weyhte of sonwh
 ardyd by the colde is resolued by the brennyng hete of phebz the 24
 ne / for her sen men redely the causes / but the causes I-hid þat is
 seyn in heuene trowblen the brestys of men / the moeuable poeple
 stonyd of alle thinges þat comyn selde and sodeynly in owre age /
 yif the trowbly erreure of owre ignoraunce departede fro vs / so 23
 we wysten the causes / why þat swyche thinges by-tyden / certes
 y sholden cose to seme wondres

¹ gloss : vel heuene, in a later hand.

³ gloss : .i. eclipsis.

² leaf 133.

⁴ gloss : .s. Luna.

¶ The syxte prose [margin, leaf 139].

THos is it *quod* I / but so as þou hast yeuen or by-hyhte me /
to vnwrappen the hyd causes of thinges / and to discouere me
the resouns couered with dyrknesses .I. prey the þat þou
4 deuyse and Iuge me of this matere / and þat þou don me to
vndirstondyn it / for this meracle or this wondyr / trowblith me ryht
gretly / and thanne she a lytel what smyllynge seyde / þou clepist me
quod she to telle thing þat is grettest of alle thinges þat mowen ber
8 axed / and to the whiche question vnnethes is ther awht Inogh to
lauen it / as who seyth vnnethes is ther suffisauntly any thing to
answere parfytly to thy question / for the matere of it is swych / þa
whan o dowte is determyned and kut away / ther wexen oothe
12 dowtes with-owte nowmbyr / ryht as the heuedes wexen of ydre th
serpent þat Ercules slowh / ne ther ne weere no manere ne non ende
but yif þat a wyht constreynede tho dowtes by a ryht lyfly and
quyk fyre of thowht / þat is to seyn bi vigour / and strengthe of wit
16 / for in this matere men weeren wont to maken questions of the
symplicite of the puruyaunce of god / and of the ordyr of destine
and of sodeyn happe / and of the knowynge and predestinacio
diuine / and of the lyberte of fre wille / the whiche thinges þo
20 thy self aperceyuyt wel / of what wyht they ben / but for as moche
as the knowynge of these thinges / is a manere porcion of the medicin
of the / al be it so þat I haue lytel tyme to don it / yit natheles
wol enforcen me to shewe somewhat of it / but al thogh the nory
24 ynges of dite of musike deliteth the / þou most suffren and for-bery
a litel of thilke delite / wyle þat I weue² to þe resouns yknyt
ordre / as it liketh to þe *quod* I so do / So spak she ryht as
another bygynnyng and seyde thus / the engendryng of alle thing
28 *quod* she / and alle the progression of Muable nature / and al þ
moeueth in any manere taketh his causes / his ordre / and his formys
of the stableness of the dyuine thowht / and thilke deuy
thowht þat is yset and put in the towr / þat is to seyn in the
32 of the symplicite of god / stablyssyth many manere gyses to thinges
þat ben to done / the whiche manere / whan þat men looken it / in

¹ leaf 139, back.

² gloss: *contexo*.

thilke pure klenesse of the diuine intelligence / it is yclepyd
puruyaunce / but whan thilke manere is referred by men / to thinges
þat it moueth *and* disponith / thanne of olde men it was clepyd
destyne/ /the whiche thinges¹ / yif þat any wyht looketh wel in his 4
thowht / the strengthe of þat oon *and* of þat oother / he shal lyhtly
mowen sen / þat thise two thinges ben diuerse/ /for puruyaunce is
thilke deuyne reson / þat is enstablysshed / in the souereyn pryncce
of thinges / the whiche puruyan^{ce} disponith alle thinges/ /but 8
destine is the disposicion) *and* ordinaunce clyuynge to moeuable
thinges / by the whiche disposicion) / the puruyaunce knytteth alle
thinges in hir ordres/ /for puruyan^{ce} embraceth alle thinges to hepe /
al thogh þat they ben diuerse / *and* al thowgh they ben Infynyte/ 12
/but destyne departeth *and* ordeynyth alle thinges / syngulerly
and dyuydyd / in moeuynge / in places in formes / in tymes as
thus/ /lat the vnfoldynge of temporel ordynaunce / assemblyd / *and*
oonyd / in the lookynge of the dyuyne thowt/ /is puruyaunce// 16
and thilke same ²assemblynge / & oonynge deuyded *and* vnfolden
by tymes / lat þat ben called destyne/ /*and* al be it so þat thise
thinges ben diuerse / yit natheles hangith þat oon of þat oother//
for why the ordyr destynal procedith of the symplycite of puruy- 20
aunce/ /for ryht as werkman þat aperceyuyth in his thoght the forme
of the thing þat he wol make / *and* moeueth the effect of the werk /
and ledith þat he hadde lokyd by-forn in his thowht / symplely /
and presently / by temporel ordinaunce/ /certes ryht so god dispo- 24
nith in his puruyaunce syngulerly *and* stablely / the thinges þat
ben to done/ /but he amynstryth in many maneres *and* in diuerse
tymys by destyne/ /thilke same thynges þat³ he hath desponed/
thanne weyther þat destyn[e]⁴ be excercysed owther by some dyuyne 28
spyritz seruau^{nt}z to the deuyne puruyaunce / or elles by som sowle⁵ /
or elles by alle nature seruynge to god / or elles by the celestial
moeuynge of sterres / or elles by vertu of angelys / or elles by the
diuerse subtylyte of deuelys / or elles by any of hem / or elles by 32
hem alle/ /the destinal ordynaunce is ywouen⁶ *and* a-complyssed/
certes it is opyn thing þat the puruyaunce is an vnmoeuable / *and*

¹ gloss: .s. prudencia & fatum.

² leaf 140.

³ thynges þat by corrector.

⁴ n by corrector.

⁵ gloss: .i. anima mundi.

⁶ gloss: .i. textitur.

- symple forme of thinges to done/ /and the moeuable bond / and the
temporal ordynaunce of thinges / whiche þat the deuyne symplycite
of puryaunce / hath ordeynyd to done / þat is destine/ /for which it
4 is¹ / þat alle thinges þat ben put vndyr destyne / ben certes subgit to
puryaunce / to whiche puryaunce destyne it self is subgit and
vndyr/ /but some thinges ben put vndyr puryaunce þat surmownten
the ordynaunce of destyne / and tho ben thilke þat stably ben y-
8 fechched negh to the fyrste godhed / they sormownten the ordre of
destynal moeuablete/ /for ryht as of cercles þat tornen a-bowte a same
centre / or a-bowte ²a poynte/ /thilke cercle þat is innerest / or most
with Inne / ioyneth to the symplesse of the Myddel / and is as it
12 weere a centre or a poynt to þat oother cercles / þat tornen a-bowte
hym/ /And thilke þat isowtterest compassed / by a large enuyronnyng
is vnfolden by largere spaces / in so moche as it is fertherest³ fro the
myddle symplycite of the poynt/ /and yif ther be any thing þat
16 knytteth and felawshipith hym self to thilke myddel poynt/ /it is
constreynyd in to symplycite / þat is to seyn in to vnmoeuablete / and
it cesith to ben shad and to fletyn diuersely/ /ryht so by semblable
reson thilke thing þat departeth fyrthest fro the fyrst thowht of god /
20 it is vnfolden and summytted to grettere bondes of destyne/ /and
in so moche is the thing moore fre and laus fro destynye as it axeth /
and holdeth hym nere to thilke centre of thinges / þat is to seyn / god/
and yif the thing clyueth to the stydefastnesse of the thoght of god /
24 and be with-owte moeuyng/ /certes it sormowntyth the necessite of
destyne/ /thanne ryht swych comparyson as it is of skylynge⁴ to
vndyrstondyng⁵/ /and of thing þat is engendryd / to thing þat is /
and of tyme to eternite / and of þe cerkle to the centre/ /ryht so is
28 the ordre of moeuable destyne / to the stable symplycite of puryaunce /
thilke ordynaunce moeueth the heuene / and the sterres / and
atempyryth the elymēt; to gydere amonges hem self / and trans-
formeth hem by entrechaungeable mutasion / and thilke same ordre
32 newith ayein alle thinges growyng and fallynge⁶ a-down / by sem-
blable progression⁷ of sedes / and of sexes/ /þat is to seyn Male and
femele/ /and this ilke ordre constreyneth the fortunys and the dedes

¹ gloss: quo sit. ² leaf 140, back. ³ ferthere alterd.

⁶ gloss: .i. intellectu.

⁵ gloss: .i. accidentia.

⁴ gloss: .i. ratiocinacio.

⁷ gloss: .i. issu.

men by a bond of causes / nat able to be vnbownde¹ / the whiche
 stynal causes / whan they passen owt fro the bygynnynges of the
 moeuable puruuaunce / it mot ²nedes be / þat they ne be nat
 stable / and thus ben the thinges ful wel ygouerned / yif þat the
 aplycite dwellynge in the dyuine thought shewith forth the ordre
 causes vnable to ben I-bowed³ / and this ordre constreynyth by
 propre stablete / the Moeuable thinges / or elles they sholden
 en folyly / ffor which it is þat alle thingys semen to ben confus
 trouble to vs men / for we ne mowen nat considere thilke ordyn-
 ce / Natheles the propre manere of euery thing dressinge hem
 goode disponith hem alle / for ther nis no thing don for cause of
 1 / ne thilke thing þat is don by wykkede folk / nis nat don for
 1 / the wheche shrewes as I haue shewyd ful plentiously seken
 a / but wykked errour mystorneth hem / ne the ordre comynge
 þe poynt of souereyn good / ne declynyth nat fro his bygynnyng /
 t þou mayst seyn what vnreste may ben a worse confusion / than 16
 goode men han somtyme aduersite / and somtyme prosperite /
 a shrewes also han now thinges þat they desiren and now thinges
 they haten / wheyther men lyuen now in swych hoolnesse of
 wht / as who seyth / ben men now so wyse / þat swyche folk as 20
 ey demen to ben good folk or shrewes / þat it moste nedes ben
 at folk ben swyche as they wenen / but in this manere the domes
 men discorden / þat thilke men þat some folk demen / worthy
 fmede / oother folk demen hem worthy of torment / but lat vs 24
 raunte / I pose that som man may wel demen or knowen the goode
 folk and the badde / may he thanne knowen and sen thilke Inneryste
 temprauce of corages / as it hath ben wont to ben seyde of
 adies / as who seyth / may a man spekyng and determinen of a- 28
 mpraunces in corages / as men weere wont to demen or spekyng of
 mplexions and a-tempraunces of bodies⁴ / ne it ne is nat an vn-lyk
 yracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat / as who seyth / ⁵but it is lik
 merueyle or myracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat / why that swete 32
 ings ben couenable to some bodies þat ben hool / & to some
 adies bitteres thinges ben couenable / and also why þat some syke

¹ gloss : i. indissolubile.

² leaf 141.

³ gloss : i. indeclinabile.

⁴ gloss : quia dicitur non.

⁵ leaf 141, back.

folk' ben holpen *with* lyhte medicynes / *and* some folk' ben holpen
with sharppe medicynes/ /but natheles the leche þat knowith the
 manere / *and* the atemprance of hele and of maledye ne merueylith of
 4 it nothing/ /but what oother thing semith hele of corages but bownte
and prowesse / *and* what other thing semyth maledye of corage but
 vices/ /who is ellis kepere of good or dryuere a-wey of yuel/ /but god
 gouernour *and* lechere of thowhtes/ /the wheche god whan he hath
 8 by-holden from the heye toure¹ of his purueaunce / he knowith what
 is cou²enable to euery wyht/ *and* leueth hem þat he wot þat is
 cou²enable to hem/ /lo her-of comth *and* her-of is don this noble
 myracle of the ordre destynal / whan god þat al knowith doth swyche
 12 thing of which thing' þat vnknowynge folk' ben astoned/ /but for to
 constreine as who seyth / but for to comprehende *and* telle a fewe
 thinges of the deuyne depnesse / the whiche þat mannes resoun may
 vndirstonde/ / /thilke man þat þou wenest to ben ryht Iuste *and* ryht
 16 kepyng of equite / the contrarye of þat semyth to the deuyne
 purueaunce þat al wot/ / *and* lukan my famyler telleth that the
 victories cawse lykede to the goddes/ *and* the cause ouercomen
 lykede to caton/ /thanne what so euere þou mayst sen þat is don in
 20 this world vnhoped / or vnwenyd / certes it is the ryhte ordre
 thinges/ /but as to thy wykkede opynyon / it is a confusion/ /but .I.
 sopose that som man be so wel I-thewed þat the deuyne Iugement
and the Iugement' of mankynde acorden hem to-gydere of hym / but
 24 he is vnstydefast of corage / þat yif any aduersite come to hym he
 wol forletyn *par* auenture to continue Innocence / by the whiche he
 ne may nat withholden ³fortune/ /thanne the wyse dispensacion/ of
 god / sparith hym⁴ the whiche man aduersite myhte enpeyren / for
 28 þat god wol nat suffren hym to trauayle to whom þat trauayle nis nat
 couenable / Anothir man is *parfyt* in alle vertus *and* is an holy man
and negh to god / so þat the puruyaunce of god wolde demen / þat
 it weere a felonye þat he weere towchid *with* any aduersites / so þat
 32 he wol nat suffre þat swych a man be moeued *with* any bodyly
 maledye/ /but so as seyde a phylosophre the moore excellent by me//
 he seyde in grec / þat vertuus han edified the body of the holy man/

¹ *gloss* : i. spectacula. ²—² by a corrector. ³ leaf 142. ⁴ *gloss* : .a. man.

/and oftyme it bytydeth þat the somme of thinges þat ben to done is taken to gouerne to goode folk/ /for þat the malyce haboundaunt of shrewes sholde ben abated/ /and god yeuith *and* departeth to oothre folk' prosperites *and* aduersites ymedled to hope after the qualite of 4 hir corages / *and* remordith some folk' by aduersite / for they ne sholde nat wexen prowde / by longe welefulnesse/ /*and* oother folk' he suffreth to ben trauaylyd with harde thinges / for þat they sholden confermen the vertus of corages / by the vsage *and* excercitacion 8 of pacience / & oother folk' dredyn moore than they owhten the whiche they myhten wel beeryn / *and* thilke folk god ledith in to experience of hymself by aspre *and* sorwful thinges/ /*and* many oother folk' han bowht honourable renoun of this world by the prys of 12 the glorious deth/ /*and* som men þat ne mowen nat ben ouercomen by tormentz / han yeuen ensauple to othre folk' / þat vertu may nat ben ouercomyn by aduersitees / *and* of alle thinges ther nis no dowte / þat they ne ben don ryhtfully / *and* ordenely to the profyt 16 of hem / to whom we sen thise thinges bytyde/ /for certes þat aduersite comth som tyme to shrewes / *and* som tyme þat that they desiren it comth of thise forseide / cawses/ /*and* of sorwful thinges þat bytyden to shrewes / certes no man ne wondrith / for alle men 20 wenen þat they han wel deseruyd ¹it' *and* þat they ben of wykkede meryte / of whiche shrewes the torment som tyme agastyth oother to don felonies / *and* som tyme it amendith hem þat suffren the tormentz// *and* the prosperite þat is yeuen to shrewes sheweth a gret argument 24 to goode folk' what thing they sholden demen of thilke welefulnesse / the whiche prosperite men sen ofte seruen to shrewes/ /In the which thing .I. trowe þat god dispensith for per auenture the nature of som man is so ouerthrowenge to yuel / *and* so vncouenable / þat 28 the nedy pouerte of his howshold myhte rather egren hym to don felonies/ /*and* to the Maledie of hym god pittyth remedie to yeuen hym Rychesses / *and* som oother man byholdeth his conscience defowled with synnes / *and* makith comparison of his fortune *and* of 32 hym self / *and* dredith per auenture þat is blysfulnesse / of which the vsage is loyeful to hym / þat the leesyng of thilke blysfulnesse /

¹ leaf 142, back.

ne be nat sorwful to hym / *and* therfor he wol chaunge his maneres/
/and for he dredith to leese his fortune / he forletith his wykked-
nesse/ /to oothre folk' is welefulnesse y-yeuen vnworthyly / the
4 wheche ouerthroweth hem in to distruccion pat they han desseruyd/
/and to som oothre folk is yeuen power' to punyssen / for pat it shal
be cause of contumacion *and* excercisyng to goode folk' / *and* cause
of torment to shrewes/ /for so as ther nis non alyauce by-twice
8 goode folk' *and* shrewes / ne shrewes ne mowen nat acordy amonges
hem self / *and* why nat / for shrewes discorden of hem self by hire
vices / the whiche vices alto-Renden hir consciences / *and* don ofte
tyme thinges / the whiche thingis whan they han don hem / they
12 demen pat tho thingis ne sholden nat han ben don/ /ffor which
thing thilke souereyn purueaunce hath maked ofte tyme faire myracle/
so pat shrewes han maked shrewes to ben goode men / for whan pat
som shrewes sen pat they suffren / wrongfully felo¹nyes of oother
16 shrewes / they wexen eschaufet in to hate of hem / pat anoyeden
hem / *and* retornen to the frut of vertu / whan they to ben vnlyk to
hem pat they han hated/ /Certes oonly this is the deuyne myht / to
the wheche myht. yuelis ben thanne goode / whan it vseth tho yuelis
couenably / *and* draweth owt the effect of any goode / as who seyth
pat yuel is good oonly to the myht of god/ /for the myht of god
20 ordeynith thilke yuel to good/ /for oon ordre enbrasith alle thinges /
so pat what wyht pat departeth fro the rescoun of thilke ordre which
pat is assyngned to hym / algates yit he slydith in to a nother ordre/
/so pat no thing' nis leueful to folye in þe Reame of the deuyne pur-
24 uyaunce / as who seyth / nothing nis with-owten ordinaunce / in
the Reame of þ^e deuyne puruyaunce / syn pat the Ryht stronge god
gouernith alle thinges in this world/ /ffor it nis nat leueful to man to
comprehenden by wit / ne vnfolden by word / al the subtyl ordin-
28 aunces *and* disposicions of the deuyne entente/ /ffor oonly it owhte
suffise to han looked / pat god hym self makere of alle natures
ordeynyth *and* dressyth alle thinges to goode wyl pat he hasteth to
withholden the thinges pat he hath maked / in to his semblaunce /
32 pat is to seyn for to withholden thinges in to good / for he hym self

good/ /he chasith ow't al yuel fro the bowndes of his *communalyte* /
 y the ordre of necessite destynable/ /ffor which it folwith þat yif
 ou looke the *puruyaunce* ordeynynge the thinges þat men wenen
 an outraious / or habowndant in Erthis/ /þou ne shalt nat sen in no 4
 lace no thing of yuel/ /but I se now that þou art charged with the
 eyhte of the questyon/ /and weerey with the lengthe of my reson
 and that thou abydyest som swetnesse of songe / tak thanne this
 rawht / and whan þou art wel refreshed and relect / thou shal be 8
 more stydefast to stye in to heere questyouns/ /

¶ The sixte Metur [margin, leaf 144, back]

IF þou wys wilt demyn in thy pure thouht / the Ryhtes or the
 lawes of the heye thonderere / þat is to seyn of god/ /loke þou
 and byhold the heyhtes of the souereyn heuene/ /there kepyn 12
 the sterres by ryhtful alliaunce of thinges hyr olde pees/ /the
 onne I-moeued by his rody ffyr ne disturbeth nat the colde clerke
 f the Moene/ /ne the sterre Iclepyd the bere¹ / þat enclynyth his
 auyssynge cours abowten the souereyn heyhte of the worlde/ /ne the 16
 ame sterre vrsa nis neuer mo wasshen in the depe westrene see/
 e coueytith nat to deeyn² his flaumes in the see of the occian / al
 hogh he³ se oothre sterres I-plownged in the see/ /and hesperus the
 terre bodith and tellith alwey the late nyhtes/ /and lucifer the sterre 20
 ryngeth ayein the cleere day/ /and thus maketh loue entrechaunge-
 ble the perdurable courses/ /and thus is discordable batayle I-put
 wt of the contre of þ⁴ sterres/ /this acordaunce atemprith by euenelyk
 aneres the elymen⁵ / þat the moyste thinges struynges with the 24
 rye thinges / yeuen place by stowndes/ /& the colde thinges loynen
 em by feyth to the hote thinges / and that the lyhte fyr arysith in
 o heyhte / and the heuy erthes aualen by hyr weyhtes/ /by thise
 ame causes the flowry 3er⁶ yildeth swote smelles in the fyrste somer 28
 eson⁷ warmynge/ /and the hote somer dryeth the cornes / and
 utumpne comth ayein heuy of applis / and the fletynge reyn by-
 ewith⁸ the wynter / this atempraunce norissith and bryngeth forth
 lle thing þat berith lyf in this world / And thilke same atempran⁹ce 32

¹ gloss: .i. vrsa.

² gloss: .i. tingere.

³ gloss: .i. stella.

⁴ leaf 145.

⁵ gloss: .i. irrigat.

rauyssynge hidith *and* by-nymith / & drenchith vnder the laste deth
 alle thinges I-born / Amonges thise thinges sitteth the heye makere /
 kyng / *and* lord / welle *and* bygynnyng / lawe *and* wys Iuge / to
 4 don equite / *and* gouerneth *and* enclynith the brydlis of thinges / *and*
 tho thinges þat he sterith to gon by moeuynge / he witdrawith *and*
 arestith *and* affermeth moeuable or wandryng thinges / /for yif þat
 he ne klepede nat ayein the ryht goynge of thinges / *and* yif þat he
 8 ne constreynede hem nat eft sones in to Rowndnesses enclynede the
 thinges þat ben now continued by stable ordinaunce / they sholden
 departen from hir welle / þat is to seyn from hir bygynge / *and*
 faylen / þat is to seyn torne in to nowht / /this is the comune loue to
 12 alle thinges / *and* alle thinges axen to ben holden by the fyn of good /
 for elles ne myhten they nat lasten / yif they ne come nat eft sones
 ayein by loue retorned to the cause þat hath yeuen hem beynge / þat
 is to seyn to god / /

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 146, back*].

16 **S** Estow nat thanne / what thinge folweth alle the thinges þat I
 haue seyde / what thing *quod* I / Certes *quod* she al owtrely /
 þat alle fortune is good / *and* how may þat be *quod* I / /now
 vndirstand *quod* she / so as alle fortune wheyther¹ so it be
 20 Ioyeful fortune / or aspre fortune / is yeuen eyther by cause of ger-
 donynge / or ellys of excersisinge of good folk / or ellis by cause to
 punnyssen / or elles chastysen shrewes / thanne is alle fortune good /
 the whiche fortune is certeyn / þat it be eyther ryhtful / or elles pro-
 24 fitable / /forsothe this is a ful verray reson¹ *quod* I / *and* yif I con-
 sidere the puruyance / *and* the destyne / þat þou tawhtest me a lytel
 her byforn / this sentence is sustenyd by stydefast resouns / /but yif
 it lyke vnto the / lat vs nowmbren hem amonges thilke thinges / of
 28 whiche þou seydist a litel her byforn that þey ne weere nat able to
 ben weened to þe poeple / /why so *quod* she / /for þat the comune word of
 men *quod* .I. mys-vseth this manere speche of fortune / *and* seyn ofte
 tymes þat the fortune of som wyht is wykkede / /wyltow thanne *quod*
 32 she þat .I. aproche a lytel to the wordes of the poeple / so þat it

¹ leaf 147.

seme nat to hem þat I be ouermoeche departed as fro the vsage of
man-kynde/ /as þou wolt *quod* I/ /demestow nat *quod* she that alle
thing þat profitith is good/ /yis *quod* I/ /and certes thilke thing that
excercisith / or corigit profitith/ /I confesse it wel *quod* I/ /thanne 4
is it good *quod* she/ /why nat *quod* I/ /but this is the fortune
quod she of hem þat eyther ben put in vertu and bataylen ayeins
aspre thingis / or elles of hem þat eschwen and declynen fro vices /
and taken the wey of vertu/ /this ne may I nat denye *quod* I/ /but 8
what seystow of the myrre fortune / þat is yeuen to good folk / in
gerdoun / demyth awht the poeple þat it is wykked/ /nay forsothe
quod I/ /but they demyn as it soth is / þat it is ryht good/ /and what
seystow of þat oother fortune *quod* she / þat al thogh þat it be aspre / 12
and restreynith the shrewes by ryhtful torment / weenith awht the
poeple þat it be good/ /nay *quod* I/ /but the poeple demyth þat it is
most wretched of alle thinges þat may ben thoght/ /war now and
loke wel *quod* she lest þat we in folwyng the opynyon of the poeple / 16
haue confessyd and concludyd thing þat is vnable to ben weened to
the poeple / /what is that *quod* I/ /Certes *quod* she it folwith or comth
of thinges þat ben graunted / þat alle fortune what so euer it be / of
hem þat ben eyther in possession of vertu / or in the encres of vertu / 20
or elles in the purchasyng of vertu / þat thilke fortune is good //
and that alle fortune is ryht wykkede to hem þat dwellyn in
shrewednesse/ /as who seyth / and thus weenith nat the poeple/ /that
is soth *quod* I/ /al be it so þat no man dar confesse it / ne by-knowen 24
it/ /why so *quod* she/ /for ryht as the stronge man / ne semyth nat
to abayssen¹ or disdainen as ofte tyme as he herith the noyse of þe
batayle/ /ne also it ne semyth nat to þe wyse man to beeryn it
greuously as ofte as he is lad in to the stryf of fortune/ /for bothe to 28
þat oon man and ek to þat oother thilke difficulte is the matere / to
þat oon man of encres of his glorios renoun / and to þat oother man to
conferme his sapience / þat is to seyn to the asprenesse of his estat/
/for þerfore is it called vertu / for þat it sustenith and enforseth by 32
hise strengthis þat it nis nat ouercomyn by aduersitees/ /ne certes þou
þat art put in the encres or in the heyhte of vertu / ne hast nat

¹ leaf 147, back.

comyn to fletyn with delices / *and* for to wellen in bodely luste/ /thow
sowest or plawntest a ful egre batayle in thy corage ayenis every
fortune/ /for þat the sorwful fortune ne confownde the nat/ ne þat
4 the merye fortune ne corumpe the nat/ /Ocupye the Meene by styde-
fast strengthes/ /for al þat euer is vndir the Meene / or elles al þat
ouerpassith the Meene despisith welefulnesse/ /as who seyth it is
vicious / *and* ne hath no Meede of his trauayle/ /for it is set in yowre
8 hand / as who seyth it lith in yowre powere / what fortune yow is
leuest/ /þat is to seyn good or yuel/ /for alle fortune þat semyth sharp
or aspre / yif it ne excersyse nat the good folk/ ne chastiseth the
wykked folk / it punysseth

¶ The seuende Metur [margin, leaf 148, back]

12 **T**He wrekere attrides / þat is to seyn Agamenon / þat wrowhte
and continuede the batayles by .X. 3er recouered *and* purgede
in wrekyng by the destrucsyon of troye/ /the loste chaum-
brys of maryaage of his brothir/ /this is to seyn þat he
16 Agamenon wan ayein Elyne þat was Menelaus wyf his brother/ /In
the mene while þat thilke Agamenon desirede to yeuyn sayles to the
grekyssh nauye / *and* bowhte ayein the wyndes / by blod/ /he
vnclouthede hym of pyte of fadyr/ /and the sory preest yeuith in
20 sacryfyng the wreched kuttinge of throte of the dowhter/ /þat is
to seyn þat Agamenon let kuttyn the throte of his dowhter¹ by the
preest to maken allyaunce with his goddes / *and* for to han wynde
with whiche he myhte wenden to troye/ /ytakus þat is to seyn vlixes
24 by-wepte his felawes ylorn / the whiche felawes the feerse poliphemus
liggyng in his grete caue hadde fretyn / *and* dreynt in his empty
wombe/ /but natheles poliphemus wood for his blynde visage / yald to
vlixes Ioye by his sorwful teeres / this is to seyn þat vlixes smot owt the
28 eye of poliphemus / þat stood in his forehed / for whiche vlixes hadde
Ioye / whan he say poliphemus wepyng *and* blynde/ /hercules is cele-
brable for his harde² trauayles / he dawntede the prowde centauris half
hors half man / *and* he byrafte the dispoylyng from the crwel lyon/ /
32 þat is to seyn he³ slow the lyon *and* rafte hym his skyn/ /he smot the

¹ gloss: .s. ephigeniam.

² leaf 149.

³ gloss: .s. hercules.

rydys þat hyhten arpiis¹ with certeyn arwys / he rauysshede applis fro
he wakyng dragown / *and* his hand was the moore heuy for the goldene
metal / he drowh cerberus the hownd of helle by his treble cheyne//
he ouercome as it is sayd hath put an vnmeke lord foddre to his 4
rwel hors / this to seyn þat hercules slowgh dyomedes / *and* made
his hors to freten hym / *and* he ercules slowgh Idra the serpent *and*
rende the venym/ *and* achelows the flood defowlede in his for-
ed dreynte his shamefast visage in his strondes/ /this to seyn þat 8
chelous koude transfigure hym self in to diuerse lyknesses / *and* as
he fawht with erkules at the laste he tornede hym in to a bole / *and*
ercules brak of oon of hise hornes / *and* he² for shame hidde hym
in his ryuer/ *and* he Ercules cast adown antheus the gyaunt in the 12
trondes of lybye / *and* kacus apaysede the wratththes of enander/
this to to seyn þat hercules slowgh the monstre kacus *and* apaysede
with þat deth the wratthe of enander/ *and* the brysteled boor
markede with scomes the shuldres of herkules/ /the whiche sholdres 16
he heye clerke of heuene sholde thriste/ *and* the laste of his laborus
ras þat he sustenyd the heuene vp on his nekke vnbowed³/ *and* he
eseruede ofte sones the heuene to ben the prys of his laste trauayle/
goth now thanne ye stronge men ther as the heye way of the grete 20
nsaumple ledith yow/ /O nyce men why nake ye yowre backs/ /as
who seyth. O ye slowe *and* delicat men / why flee ye aduersytes /
and ne fyhten nat ayenis hem by vertu to wynnyn the Mede of the
euene/ /ffor the erthe ouercomyn 4yeuith sterres/ /this to seyn / þat 24
than þat orthely lust is ouercomyn /a man is makd worthy to the
euene

¶ The fyrste prose [*margin, leaf 151*]

He hadde seyde *and* torned by cours of hir reson to some oothre
things to ben tretiye *and* to ben ysped/ /thanne seyde I/
/Certes ryhtful is thin amonestyng / *and* ful digne by 28
autorite but þat þou seydist whilom þat the questyon of thy
yuyne puruiauunce is enlaced with many oother questionous / I vndir-
sonde wel *and* proeue it by the same thing/ /but I axe yif þat þou
enest þat hap be any thing in any weys/ *and* yif þou weenest þat hap 32

¹ gloss: in þe palude of lyrne.

² gloss: i. inreflexe.

³ gloss: s. Achelous.

⁴ leaf 149, back.

be any thing / what it is/ /thanne *quod* she I haste me to yilden *and*
 assoylen to the dette of my byhest/ /and to shewen *and* openen the
 wey / by which wey þou mayst come ayein to thy contre/ /but al be
 4 it so / þat the thinges which þat þou axest ben ryht profitable to
 knowe / *and* yit ben they diuerse somewhat fro the paath of my purpos/
 /*and* it is to dowten þat þou ne be makid weery by mys weyes / so
 þat þou ne mayst nat suffice to mesuren the ryht wey/ /ne dowte the
 8 ther-of nothing *quod* I/ /ffor for to knowen thilke thinges to-gedere/
 in the whiche thinges I delite me gretly / þat shal ben to me in
 styde of reste / syn it nis nat to dowten of the thinges folwinge/
 whan euery syde of thy disputacion shal han ben stydefast to me by
 12 vndowtous feyth/ /thanne seyde she / þat manere wol I don the/
 & bygan to speken ryht thus/ /*Certes quod* ¹she yif any wyht def-
 fenys she hap in this manere þat is to seyng / hap is bytydyng² I-
 browht forth by foolissh moeuyng / and by no knettyng of causes/
 16 /I. conferme þat hap nis ryht nawht in no wyse / *and* .I. deme al
 owtrelly / þat hap nis ne dwelleth but a voyce / as who seyth but an
 Idel word / *with*-owten any sygnificacion of thing submitted to þat
 vois / for what place myhte ben lefte or dwellyng to folye *and* to
 20 disorderaunce / syn þat god ledith *and* constreynyth alle thinges by
 ordre/ /for this sentence is verray *and* soth þat nothing ne hath his
 beyng of nawht / to the whiche sentence none of these olde folk ne
with-seyde neuere / al be it so þat they ne vndirstondyn ne meneden
 24 it nawht by god prince *and* bygygnere of werkynge/ /but they
 casten as a manere fowndement of subiect material / þat is to seyn of
 the nature of alle resoun/ /*and* yif þat any thing is woxen or comyn
 of no cawses / thanne shal it seme þat thilke thing is comyn or woxen
 28 of nawht / but this ne may nat ben don / thanne is it nat possible/
 þat hap be any swych thing as I have diffynysshed a lytel her byform/
 /how shal it thanne be *quod* I/ /nys ther thanne no thing þat by ryht
 may be clepyd / eyther hap or ellis auenture of fortune / ar is ther
 32 awht / al be it so þat it is hidd fro the poeple to which these wordes
 ben conuenable/ /Myn Arystotulis *quod* she / in the book of his phisik
 diffynyssheth this thing by short reson/ /*and* nehg to the sothe/ /In

¹ leaf 151, back.

² *gloss*: .i. euentum.

which manere quod I/ /as ofte quod she as men don any thing for grace
 of any oother thing/ /and an oother thing than thilke thing þat men
 entenden to don / by-tydith by some causes / it is clepyd hap/ /Ryht
 as a man dalf the Erthe by cause to tylyng of the feeld / & fownde 4
 there a gobet of gold by-doluen/ /thanne weenen folk / þat it is byfalle
 by fortunows bytydyng/ /but for sothe it nis nat of nawht / for it hath
 hise propre 'causes of whise causes / the cours vnforeseyn and vnwar
 semyth to han maked hap / for yif the tylyere of the feld ne dolue nat 8
 in the Erthe and yif the hydere of þe gold / ne hadde hidde the gold
 in thilke place / the gold ne hadde nat ben fownde / thise ben thanne
 the causes of the a-briggyng of fortuit hap / the which abreggyng
 of fortuit hap comth of causes encowntryng and flowyng to-gydere 12
 to hem self / and nat by the entencion of the doere / for neyther the
 hidere of the gold / ne the deluere of the feeld / ne vndirstoden nat
 þat the gold sholde han ben fownde/ /but as I sayde it bytydde / and
 ran to-gydere þat he dalf there as þat oother hadde hyd the gold/ 16
 /now may I thus diffynesse hap/ /hap is an vnwar bytydyng of
 causes assembled in thingis þat ben don for som oother thing but
 thilke ordre procedyng / by an vn-eschuable byndyng to-gydere /
 which þat descendith fro the welle of puruyaunce / þat ordeynyth 20
 alle thinges / in hir places / and in hir tymes / maketh þat the
 causes rennen and assemblyn to gydere /

¶ The fyrste Metur [margin, leaf 152, back]

Tigris and eufrates resoluen and spryngen of oo welle in the
 kragges of the Roche of the contre of a-chemenie / ther as the 24
 fleyng batayle fichcheth hir dartes retorned in the brestis
 of hem þat folwen hem/ /and soone after tho same Ryueres
 tigris and eufrates/ vnloynen and departen hir wateres and yif they
 comyn to-gyderes / & ben assembled and clepyd to-gydere in-to 28
 o cours / thanne moten thilke thinges fletyn to-gydere / which þat
 the water of the entrechaungyng² flod bringith the shippes / & the
 stokkes arraced with the flood moten assemblyn / and the wateres .I.
 medlyd wrappith³ or implieth many fortunel happis or maneres/ /to 32

¹ leaf 152.

² gloss: .i. alterni.

³ gloss: .i. implicat.

whiche wandrynge happes natheles / thilke declynyng¹ lownesse of
the erthe / *and* the flowinge ordre of the slydyng whater gouernith /
ryht so fortune þat semyth as þat it fletith with slaked or vn-
4 gouernede brydles / it suffreth brydles / þat is to seyn to ben gouerned /
/ *and* passeth by thilke lawe / þat is to seyn by thilke deuyne
ordenance

¶ The 2^d prose [*margin, leaf 153, back*]

8 **T**His vndirstonde .I. wel / *and* I acorde me þat it is ryht as
þou seyst / but I axe yif ther be any liberte of fre wil in
this ordre of causes / þat clyuen thus to-gidere in hym self /
/ or elles .I. wolde witen yif þat the destynal cheyne con-
streynith the mouynges of the corages of men / */is quod* she ther is
12 liberte of free wil / ne ther ne was neuere no nature of reson / þat it
ne hadde liberte of ffree wil / for euery thing þat may natureli vsen
reson / it hath doom by which it decernith *and* demyth euery thing /
þanne knoweth it by it self thinges þat ben to fleen *and* thinges þat
16 ben to desiren / *and* thilke thing þat any wyht demyth to ben desired /
þat axeth or desireth he / *and* fleeth thilke thing þat he troweth to
ben fleen / wherfore in alle thinges þat reson is / in hem also is
liberte of wyllinge / *and* of nyllynge / but .I. ne ordeyne nat as who
20 seyht / I ne graunte nat / þat this liberte beeuene lyk in alle thinges
/ for why in the souereynes dyuynes substaunces / þat is to seyn in
spirit / Iugement is moore cleere / *and* wil nat .I. coromped / *and*
myht redy to spedyn thinges þat ben desired / but the sowles of
24 men moten needes be moore free / whan they looken hem in the
speculacion or lookyng of the deuyne thocht / & lasse ²free whan
they slyden in to the bodies / *and* yit lasse free whan they ben
gaderyd to-gidere *and* comprehendyd in erthely membris / but the
28 laste seruage is / whan þat they ben yeuen to vices / *and* han yfalle
from the possession of hir propre reson / for after þat they han cast
away hir eyen fro the lyht of the souereyn sothfastnesse to lowe thinges
and derke / Anon they derkin by the clowdes of ignorance / *and* ben
32 trowblyd by felonos talentz / to whiche talentz / whan they aprochen
and asenten / thei hepin *and* encresin the seruage / which they han

¹ gloss: decliuitas.

² leaf 154.

Ioyned to hem self / *and* in this manere they ben kaytyfs fro hir
 propre liberte / the whiche thinges natheles / the lookynge of the
 deuyne puryaunce seth / þat alle thinges byholdith *and* seth fro
 eterne / *and* ordeynith hem euerych in hir merites / as they ben 4
 predestynat/ *and* it is seyde in grek / þat alle thinges he seth *and*
 alle thinges he herith

¶ The .2.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 154, back*]

Homer with the hony Mowth / þat is to seyn/ /Homer with
 the swete dities / syngith / þat the sonne is cleer by pure 8
 lyht/ /natheles yit ne may it nat by the Infirme lyht of
 his beemes / brekyn or percen / the inward entrailes of
 the erthe / or elles of the see/ /so ne seth nat god makers of the grete
 world / to hym þat looketh alle thinges from an hegh ne withstondith 12
 no thinges by heuynesse of herthe/ /ne the nyht ne withstondith nat
 to hym by the blake klowdes/ /thilke god seeth in oo strokk¹ of
 thoght / alle thinges þat ben / or weeren / or shollen comyn / *and*
 thilke god for he loketh *and* seth alle thinges alone/ /thow mayst seyn 16
 þat he is the verray sonne

¶ The .3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 157, back*]

THanne seyde .I. now am I confownded by a moore hard
 dowte than I/ /was/ /what dowte is þat quod she/ /for certes
 I coniecte now / by whiche thinges þou art trowbled/ /it 20
 semyth quod I to repugnen *and* to contraryen gretly / þat
 god knowit byforn alle thinges / *and* þat ther is any freedom of
 liberte/ /for yif so be þat god looketh alle thinges byforn / ne god ne
 may nat ben desseyuyd in no manere / than mot it nedes ben / þat 24
 alle thinges by-tyden / the whiche þat the puryaunce of god hath
 seyn byforn to comyn/ /for which yif þat god knowith byforn / nat
 oonly the werkes of men / but also hir conseyles *and* hir willes//
 thanne ne shal ther be no liberte of arbitre/ /ne certes ther ne may 28
 be noon oother dede / ne no wil but thilke/ which þat the deuyne
 puryaunce þat ne may nat ben desseyuyd hath feelyd byforn/ /for
 yif þat they myhten wrythen away in oothre manere / than they ben

¹ gloss: i. ictu

purueyd/ /thane sholde ther be no stydefast prescience of thing to
 comyn // but rather an vncerteyn opynyon/ /the whiche thing ¹to
 trowen of god I deme it felonye and vnleueful/ /ne I ne proeue nat
 4 thilke same reson as who seyth/ /I ne alowe nat or I ne preyse nat
 thilke same reson / by which þat som men weenen þat they mowen
 assoylen and vnknyten the knotte of this question / for certes they
 seyn þat thing nis nat to comyn / for þat the puruyaunce of god
 8 hath seyn byform þat is to comyn / but² rather the contrarye / and
 þat this/ /þat for þat the thing is to comyn therefore ne may it nat
 ben hidde fro the puruyaunce of god/ /and in this manere this
 necessite slydith ayein in to the contrarye partye/ /ne it ne by-houeth
 12 nat nedes þat thinges bytyden / þat ben puruyed/ /but it by-houeth
 nedes / þat thinges þat ben to comyn ben yporueyid/ /but as it weere
 ytrauayled / as who seyth þat thilke answer procedith ryht as thogh
 men trauayleden / or weeren bysy to enqueren / the whiche thing is
 16 cause of the whiche thing / as weyther the prescience is cause of the
 necessite of thinges to comyn / or elles þat the necessite of thinges to
 comyn is cause of the puruyaunce³ /but I ne enforce me nat now to
 shewen it⁴ / þat the bitydinge of thinges I wist byform is necessarie//
 20 how so or in what manere/ /þat the ordre of causes hath it self/ /al
 thogh þat it ne seme nat / þat the prescience bringe in necessite of
 bytydinge to thinges to comyn /for certes yif þat any wyht sitteth /
 it bi-houyth by necessite þat the opinion be soth of hym þat coniect-
 24 eth þat he sitteth /and ayeinward also is it of the contrarye/ /yif the
 opynyon be soth of any wyht / for þat he sitteth /it by-houyth by
 necessite þat he sitte/ /thane is heere necessite in þat oon and in þat
 oother / for in þat oon is necessite of sittynge / and certes in þat
 28 oother is necessite of sooth/ /but therefore ne sittith nat a wyht / for
 þat the opynyon of the sittynge is soth/ /but the opynyon is rather
 sooth for þat a wyht ⁵sitteth by-form/ /and thus al thogh / þat the
 cause of the sooth com⁶th of þat other syde/ /as who seith þat al thogh
 32 þe cause of soth com⁶th of þe sittynge and nat of thee trewe opynyon /
 Algates yit is there comune necessite in þat on and in þat oother//
 thus shewith it þat I may make semblable skyles / of the puruy-

¹ leaf 158.² gloss: .s. aiunt.³ gloss: .s. providencie.⁴ gloss: illud.⁵ leaf 158, back.⁶— by corrector.

aunce of god / *and* of thinges to comyn / for al thowh þat for þat
thinges ben comyn ther-fore ben they purueyid / nat certes for
they ben purueyid ther-fore ne bytyde they nat / yit natheles by-
houyth it by necessite / þat eyther the thinges to comyn ben 4
ypurueyid of god / or elles þat the thinges þat ben purueyid of god
bytyden¹ / *and* this thing only suffiseth ynowh to destroyen the
freedom of owre arbitre / þat is to seyn of owre free wil / but now
certes shewith it wel / how fer fro the sothe / *and* how vp so down² 8
is this thing / þat we seyn þat the bytydyng of temporel thinges is
cause of the eterne prescience / but for to wenyn / þat god puruyeth
the thinges to comyn for they ben to comyn / what oother thing is
it but for to weene / þat thilke thinges þat bytydden / whilom / ben 12
causes of thilke souereyn puruyaunce / þat is in god / *and* her-to
I adde yit this thing / þat ryht as whan þat I wot þat a thing is /
it by-houyth by necessite þat thilke selue thing be / *and* ek whan I
haue knowe þat any thing shal bytyden so by-houith it by necessite 16
þat thilke same thing bytyde / so folweth it thanne / þat the bytyd-
yng of the thing / .I. wist byforne ne may nat ben eschwed / *and*
at the laste³ yif þat any wyht weene a thing to ben oother weyes
thanne it is / it is nat oonly vnscience / but it is deceyuable opynyon / 20
ful diuerse *and* fer fro the soothe of science / wherfore yif any thing
be so to comyn / so þat the bytydyng of hit ne be nat certeyn ne
necessarie / who may wetyn byforne þat thilke thing is to comyn /
for ryht as science ne may nat ben Medlyd / wit falsnesse / as who 24
seyth / þat yif y wot a thing / it ne may nat be false þat⁴ I ne wot it /
ryht so thilke thing⁵ þat is conseyuyd by science / ne may nat ben
non oother weys thanne as it is conceyuyd / ffor þat is the cause whi
þat science wantith lesing / as who seyth whi þat witynge ne reseuyth 28
nat leesinge of þat it wot / ffor it by-houyth by necessite þat euery
thing be ryht as science comprehendith it to be / what shal I thanne
seyn / In which manere knowith god byforne the thinges to comyn /
yif they ne be nat certeyn / for yif þat he⁶ deme þat they⁶ ben to 32
comyn / vneschwably⁷ / *and* so may be þat it is possyble / þat they

¹ *gloss* : .s. by necessite.³ *gloss* : .i. postremo. ⁴ leaf 159.⁶ *gloss* : .s. thynges.² *gloss* : ppostere.⁵ *gloss* : .s. deus.⁷ *gloss* : .i. memorabiliter.

ne shollen nat comyn god is desseyuyd/ /but nat oonly to trowen
 þat god is desseyuyd / but for to speke it wit Mowth it is a
 felonos synne/ /but yif þat god wot þat ryht so as thinges ben
 4 to comyn so shullyn they comyn/ /so þat he wite egaly / as
 who seyth indifferently þat thinges mowen ben doon or elles nat
 ydoon/ /what is thilke prescience þat ne comprehendith no certeyn
 thing ne staable / Or elles what difference is ther bytwixe the pre-
 8 science / and thilke Iape worthi¹ dyuynenge of tyresye the dyuynor /
 þat seyde/ /al þat I seye *quod* he / eythir it shal be / or elles it ne
 shal nat be / or elles how mochel is worth the dyuynne prescience
 moore than the opynyon of man-kynde / yif so be þat it demyth the
 12 thinges vncerteyn as men doon/ /Of the whiche *domus* of men the
 bytydynges nis nat certeyn But yif so be þat non vncerteyn thing ne
 may ben in hym / þat is ryht certeyn welle of alle thinges / thanne is
 the bytydynges certeyn of thilke thinges / whiche he² hath wist byforn
 16 fermely³ to comyn/ /for which hit folweth that the freedom of the
 conseyles *and* of the werkes of man-kynd nis non / syn þat the thoght
 of god þat seth alle thinges *with-owten* errowr of falsnesse / byndeth
 and *constreynyth* hem to a bytydynges by necessite/ *and* yif this
 20 thing be oonis ygraunted *and* resseyuyd / þat is to seyn þat ther
 nis no free wille/ /than she with it wel / how gret destruccyon⁴ *and* /
⁵how grete damages ther folwen of thinges of mankynde/ /ffor in
 ydel ben ther thanne purposed *and* by-hyht Meedes to goode folk/
 24 *and* peynes to badde folk/ /syn þat no moeuynges of free corage
 voluntarye ne hath nat deseruyd hem / þat is to seyn neyther meede
 ne payne / *and* it sholde seme thanne / þat thilke thing is alderworst/
 which þat is now demyd for aldermoost Iust *and* most ryhtful//
 28 þat is to seyn þat shrewes ben punysshed/ /or elles þat goode
 folk⁶ ben ygerdonyd/ /the whiche folk⁶ syn þat hir propre wil ne
 sent hem nat to þat oon / ne to þat oother / þat is to seyn / neyther
 to goode ne to harm// but constreynith hem certeyn necessite of
 32 thinges to comyn/ /thanne ne shollen ther neuere ben / *ne neuere*
 weeren vice ne vertu/ /but it sholde rathir ben confusioun of alle
 dissertes / Medlyd *with-owten* discrecion/ *and* yit ther folweth

¹ gloss: .i. ridiculo.

² gloss: .s. deus.

³ gloss: .i. firmiter.

⁴ const corrected.

⁵ .i. occasus.

⁶ leaf 159, back.

a noother inconuenient of the whiche ther ne may ben thoght no
 moore felonos ne moore wykke / *and* þat is this / þat so as the ordre
 of thinges is yled *and* comth of the puruynce of god / ne that no thing
 nis leueful to the conseyles of mankynde/ /as who seyth þat men han 4
 no power to doon no thing / ne wilne no thing/ /thanne folweth it
 that owre vices ben referred to the makere of alle good/ /as who seyth
 thanne folweth it / þat god owhte han the blame of owre vices / syn
 he constreynith vs by necessite to doon vices/ /thanne is ther no 8
 reson to hopen in god / ne for to preyen to god/ /for what sholde any
 wyht hopyn to god / or why sholden he preyen to god / syn þat the
 ordynauce of destyne / which þat ne may nat ben inclyned / knytteth
and streynyth alle thinges þat men may desyren/ /thanne sholde ther 12
 be doon a-wey thilke oonly allyaunce / by-twixen god *and* men / þat is
 to seyn to hopen *and* to preyen/ /but by the prys of Rihtwessenesse
and of verray mekenesse/ /we desseruyn the gerdon of the dyuyne
 grace / which þat is inestymable/ þat is to seyn þat it is so gret / þat 16
 it ne may nat ben ful ypreysyd/ *and* this is oonly the manere / þat is
 to seyn / hope *and* preyeres / for which it semyth þat men mowen
 speke with god/ *and* by reson of supplicacion be conioynyd to thilke
 cleernesse / þat nis nat aproched no rather / or þat men be-sekyn it / 20
and impetrent it/ *and* yif men weene nat þat hope ne preyeres / ne
 han strengthes / by the necessite of thinges to comyn / I-resseuyd²
 what thing is ther thanne by whiche we mowen ben conioined / *and*
 clyuen to thilke souereyn prynce of thinges / for which it by- 24
 houyth by necessite / þat the lynage of mankynde / as þou³ songe / a
 lytel her by-forn⁴ / be departed *and* vnloynyd from his welle / *and*
 faylen of his bygynnyng/ /þat is to seyn god

¶ The .3.^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 160, back]

WHat discordable cause / hath to-Rent *and* vnioygnyd⁵ the 28
 byndynge or the alliaunce of thinges/ /þat is to seyn
 the coniuncconys of god *and* ⁶man⁷ which þat god hath
 establysshed so gret batayle by-twixen thise two sooth-

¹ leaf 160. ² gloss: i. graunted. ³ gloss: .s. philosophie.

⁴ gloss: libro 4^o metro sexto.

⁵ gloss: .s. ne se compaciuntur similiter.

⁶ leaf 161.

⁷ gloss: quod dicitur (or quasi dicat) nullus.

fast / or verray thinges/ /pat is to seyn bytwixen the purnyaunce of
god and free wil/ /pat they ben synguler and deuydyd¹ / ne pat they
ne wolen nat ben Meddelyd / ne cowpeled to-gydere/ /but per nis no
4 discord to the verray thinges² but they clyuen certeyn alwey to hem-
self/ /but pe thoht of man confowndid / and ouer-thrownen by the
dirke Menbris of the body / ne may nat by fyr of his derkyd look-
ynge pat is to seyn by the vigour of his inshyhte whil the sowle is
8 in the body / knowe the thinne subtyl knyttynges of thingis/ /but
wherfore eschaufeth it³ so by so gret loue to fynden thilke notes of
soth Icouered / pat is to seyn wherfore eschaufeth the thoght of
man by so gret desyr to knowen thilke notificacyons pat ben Ihyd
12 vndyr the couertoures of sooth wot it³ awht thilke thing / pat it
a[n]gwyssos desireth to knowe / as who seyth nay/ /ffor no man
trauayleth for to witen thinges pat he wot / and therfore the texte
seyth thus/ /but who trauayleth to witen thinges yknowe / and yif
16 pat he ne knoweth hem nat / what sekyth thilke blynde thoght/
/what is he pat desireth any thing of which he not ryht nawht⁴/ /as
who seyth who so desireth any thing nedes somewhat he knoweth of
it / or elles he ne kowde nat desire it/ /Or who may folwen thinges
20 pat ne ben nat .I.-wist / and thogh pat he seke tho thinges wher
shal he fynde hem/ /what wyht pat is al vnkunynge and ignoraunt
may knowe the forme pat is yfownde⁵ / but whan the sowle by-
holdeth and seth the heye thoght / pat is to seyn god / thanne
24 knoweth it to-gidere the somme / & the syngularites / pat is to seyn
the principulis / & euerych by hym self/ /but now whil the sowle
is hidde in the clowde & in the derkenesse of the menbris of the
bodi it ne hath nat al for-yetin it self / but it withholdeth the somme
28 of thinges / & leesith the ⁶syngularites/ /thanne who so pat sekith
sothnesse / he nis in neyther nother habite / for he not nat al / ne
he ne hath nat al foryetyn/ /but yit hym remembryth the somme of
thinges pat he with-holdeth/ /and axeth conseyl / and retretith
32 deepliche thinges I-seyn by-for / ⁸pat is to seyn the grete somme in

¹ gloss: quod dicitur or (quasi dicat) non est ita.

² gloss: .s. prudencia & liberum arbitrium. ³⁻⁵ gloss: .s. anima.

⁴ quod dicitur non.

⁶ quod dicitur nullus.

⁷ leaf 161, back.

⁷ gloss: .i. retractat.

⁸ markt Glosa.

his mynde ¹so þat he mowe adden the partyes þat he hath for-yetyn to
 thilke þat he hath with-holden

¶ The 4th prose [*Margin, leaf 164, back*]

THanne seyde she / this is quod she the Olde question of the
 puruyaunce of god / *and* Marchus tullius whan he deuynede ⁴
 the dyuynaciouns / þat is to seyn in his book þat he wroot of
 diuinaciouns he moeuede gretly this question / *and* þou thy
 self hast I-sowht it mochel / *and* owtrely / *and* longe / but yit ne
 hath it nat ben determyned / ne Isped fermely *and* diligently / of any ⁸
 of yow / *and* the cause of this dirknesse *and* of this diffulte / is
 for þat the moeuynge of the reson of mankynde / ne may nat
 moeuen to / þat is to seyn applien or Ioynen to the symplicite of
 the dyuine prescience / the whiche symplicite of the deuyne pre- ¹²
 science / yif þat men myhten thinken it in any manere / þat is to
 seyn / þat yif men myhten thinken / *and* comprehendyn the thinges /
 as god seth hem / thanne / ne sholde ther dwellyn owtrely no
 dowte / the whiche resoun / *and* cause of difficulte ².I. shal assaye as ¹⁶
 the laste to shewe / *and* to speden whan I haue fyrst yspendyd / *and*
 answered to the resouns by which þou art ymoewed / ffor I axe why
 þou weenest / þat thilke resouns of hem þat assoylen this question /
 ne be nat spedful ynowh ne sufficient / the whiche solucion / or ²⁰
 the which reson / for þat it demyth þat the prescience nis nat cause
 of necessite to thingis to comyn / than ne weenith it nat þat freedom
 of wyl be destorbed or ylett by prescience / ffor ne drawestow nat
 argumentz from elles where of the necessite of thinges to comyn / as ²⁴
 who seyth any oother wey than thus / but þat thilke thinges þat the
 prescience wot byform ne mowen nat vnbytyde / þat is to seyn þat
 they moten bytyde / but thanne yif þat prescience / ne putteth no
 necessite to thinges to comyn / as thow thyself hast confessid it / *and* ²⁸
 by-knownen / a litel her byform³ / what cause or what is it / as who seyth /
 ther may no cause be / by which þat the endes⁴ voluntarie of thinges /
 myhten be constreynyd to certeyn hytydynges⁵ / ffor by grace of
 possession / so þat þou mowe the betere vndirstonde this þat folweth / ³²

¹ markt textus.

² leaf 165.

³ gloss: *prosa* .3.^a

⁴ gloss: .i. exitus.

⁵ gloss: *quod dicitur verbi gratia*.

/I. pose¹ þat ther ne be no prescience/ /thanne axe I quod she in as
mochel as apartieneth to þat / sholden thanne thinges þat comyn of
free wyl / ben constreynyd to bytyden / by necessite / B nay quod I /
4 thanne ayeinward quod she/ /I suppose þat ther be prescience / but
þat is ne putteth no necessite to thinges / thanne trowe I þat thilke
selue freedom of wil shal dwellen al hool and absolut and vnbowond-
en / but þou wolt seyn þat al be it so / þat prescience nis nat cause
8 of the necessite of bytydyng to thinges to comyn / /Algates yit it is
a syngne / þat the thinges ben to bytyden by necessite / by this
manere thanne al thogh the prescience ne hadde neuer I-ben / yit
algate or at the leeste weye / it is certeyn thing that the endes² and
12 bytydinges of thinges to comyn sholden ben necessarye/ /ffor ³euery
signe shewith and signefieth oonly what the thing is⁴ / but it ne
maketh⁵ nat the thing þat it signefieth / for which it by-houyth fyrst
to shewen þat no thing ne bytydeth / þat it ne bytydith by necessite /
16 or elles yif ther nere no necessite/ /certes thilke prescience ne myhte
nat be syngne of thing þat nis nat/ /but certes it is now certeyn
þat the proeue of this ysustenyd by stydefast reson / ne shal nat ben
lad ne proeued by sygnes / ne by argumentz .I.-taken fro with-owte /
20 but by causes couenable and necessarye/ /but þou mayst seyn how
may it be þat the thinges ne bytyden nat þat ben ypurueyed to
comen/ /but certes ryht as we trowen / þat tho thinges which þat the
puruyauce wot byforn to comyn / ne ben nat to bytyden/ /but þat
24 ne sholden we nat demen / but rather al thogh þat they shal bytyden/
yit ne haue they no necessite of hir kynde to be-tyden/ /and this
maystow lithly aperceyuen by this þat I shal seyn/ /ffor we se⁵ many
thinges whan they ben doon by-forn owre eyen / ryht as men⁶ see the
28 kartere worken in the tornynge and in atemprynge or adressynge of
hise karter or charietes/ /and by this manere as who seyth / maystow
vndirstonde of alle oother workmen/ /is ther thanne any necessitye as
who seyth in owre lookynge / þat constreynith or compellith any of
32 thinges to ben don so⁶ /boece/ /nay quod I/ /ffor in ydel and in veyn
weere al the effect of craft / yif þat alle thinges weeren mooved by

¹ gloss: per impossibile.

² leaf 165, back.

³ gloss: causat.

⁴ gloss: .i. exitus.

⁵ gloss: .i. se eius significat.

⁶ quod dicitur non.

constreynynge/ /pat is to seyn by constreynynge of owre eyen or of
oure syhte/ /philosophie/ /the thinges thanne quod she / pat whan
en doon hem / ne han no necessite / pat men doon hem / /Ek tho
me thinges fyrst or they ben doon / they ben to comyn with- 4
wte necessite/ /ffor why ther ben somme thinges¹ to bytyden of
hich the endes / and the bytydynges of hem / ben absolut / and
wit / of alle necessite/ /ffor certes I ne trowe nat pat any man
olde seyn this / pat tho thinges pat men doon now / pat they ne 8
ceeren to bytyden fyrst or they weeren I-doon/ /and thilke same
inges / al thogh / pat men hadden I-wist hem byforn / yit they
an free bytydynges/ /for ryht as science of thinges present/ ne
ryngeth in no necessite to thinges pat men doon/ /ryht so the 12
rescience of thinges to comen ne bryngeth in no necessite to thinges
be-tyden/ /but pou mayst seyn / pat of thilke same it is I-dowted /
whether pat of thilke thinges / pat ne han non issues² / and
itydynges necessities / yif ther-of may ben any prescience / ffor 16
ertes they semyn to discorden / ffor pou weenist pat yif pat thinges
en I-seyn byforn / pat necessite folwith hem/ /and yif necessite
yleth hem / they ne myhten nat ben wyst byforn/ /and yif nothing³
e may ben comprehendid by science but certeyn/ /and yif tho 20
inges pat ne han no certeyn by-tydinges⁴ / ben purueyid as certeyn//
t sholde ben dirknesse of opynion / nat soothfastnesse of science//
nd pou weenyst pat it be diuerse fro the hoolnesse of science / pat
y man sholde deme a thing to ben oother weys thanne it is it self / 24
nd the cause of this Erroure is / pat of alle the thinges pat euery
yht hath yknowe / they weenen pat tho thinges ben Iknowe al
nly / by the strengthe and by the nature of the thinges / pat ben
wist or yknowe/ /and it is al the contrarye/ /ffor al pat euere is 28
knowe / it is rather comprehendyd / and knowen nat after his
rengthe / and his nature / but after the faculte pat is to seyn the
wer and the nature of hem pat knowen / and for this shal mowen
ewen by a short ensauple the same Rowndnesse of a body/ 32
bother weys the sihte of the eye knowith it / and oother weyes pe
weching⁵ // the lookynge bi castynge of his beemes waiteth and

¹ leaf 166.

² gloss: .i. exitus.

³ gloss: putas.

⁴ gloss: exitus.

⁵ leaf 166, back.

seth from after al the body to-gidere / *with-owte* moeuyng of it self//
but the towchyng clyueth *and conioigneth* to the Rownde body/
and moeueþ abowte the enuyronyng / *and* comprehendith by partyes
4 the Rowndnesse/ /*and* the man him self / oother weys / wit by-
holdeth hym / *and* oother weys ymagynacion / *and* oother weys
reson / *and* othir weys Intelligense/ /for the wit comprehendith with-
owteforth the figure of the body of the man / þat is establisshed in
8 the matere subiect / but the ymagynacion comprehendith² only the
figure *with-owte* the matere / Reson surmounteth ymagynacion / *and*
comprehendith by vniuersal lookyng / the comune spece³/ /þat is in
the singuler peces / but the eye of intelligence is heyere / for it sur-
12 mounteth the enuyronyng of the vniuersite / *and* loketh ouer that /
bi pure subtilite of thoght/ thilke same symple forme of man / þat is
perdurably / in the dyuine thoght/ /In which this owhte gretly to
ben considered / þat the heyiste strength to comprehendyn thinges/ en-
16 braseth *and* contieneth the lower strength / but the lower strengthe
ne arysith nat in no manere to heyere strengthe / witte ne may no thing
comprehende owt of matere / ne the ymagynacion ne lookyth nat the
vniuersels speces / ne reson taketh nat the symple forme so as Intelli-
20 gence takith/ /but Intellygence looketh al a-bouen whan it hath com-
prehendith the forme / it knoweth *and* demyth alle the thinges þat
ben vndyr þat forme/ /But she⁴ knoweth hem in thilke manere / in the
which it comprehendith thilke same symple forme þat ne may neuer
24 ben known to none of þat oother/ /þat is to seyn to none of the thre
forseyde thinges of the sowle / for it knoweth the vniuersite of reson/
And the figure of the ymagynacion / *and* the sensible material con-
seyuyd bi wit/ /ne it ne vseth nat nor of resoun/ /ne of ymagynacion/
28 ne of ⁵wit *with-owte*forth/ /but it bi-holdeth alle thingis so as I
shal seye bi a strok of thoght formely / *with-owte* discours or colla-
tion/ /Certes reson whan it looketh any thing vniuersel / it ne vseth
nat of ymagynacion / nor of witte / *and* algates yit it comprehendeth
32 the thinges ymaginable *and* sensible / for reson is she / þat diffynish
et the vniuersel of hir conseyte ryht thus / Man is a resonable two
foted beest/ /*and* how so þat this knowyng is vniuersel / yit nis

¹ gloss: orbis.

² gloss: vel iudicat.

³ gloss: .i. speciem.

⁴ gloss: s intelligence.

⁵ leaf 167.

[K v.] *Knowledge is got by Men's own Power, not that in Things known.* 129
 [SE 4, METRE 4.] *The Mind works, as well as receives Images.*

er no wyht / þat ne woot wel / þat a man is a thing ymaginable
 & sensible / and this same considereth wel reson / but þat nis nat
 ymagynacion nor by wit / but it looketh it by a resonable con-
 cion / Also ymaginacion / al be it so þat it taketh of wit the 4
 gynnynge to seen & to formen the figures / algaates al thogh þat
 t ne weere nat present / yit it enuyrowneth & comprehendeth
 e thinges sensible / nat by reson sensible of deemyng / but bi
 on Imaginatyf / Sestow nat thanne þat alle the thinges in know- 8
 ge / vsen moore of hir faculte / or of hir power / thanne they
 on of the faculte or power of thinges þat ben Iknowe / Ne þat nis
 t wrong / for so as euery Iugement is the dede or doynge of hym
 t demeth / it by-houyith þat euery wyht performe the werk / and 12
 entencion / nat of foreyne power / but of his propre power

¶ The .4.th Metur [margin, leaf 168]

The porche / þat is to seyn / A gate of the town of athenis /
 ther as philosophres hadden hyr congregacion to desputen //
 thilke porche browhte som tyme oolde men ful dirke in hir 16
 sentenses / þat is to seyn philosophres þat hyhten stoyciens /
 it wenden þat ymagis and sensibilitees / þat is to seyn sensible
 maginacions / Or ellis ymagynacions of sensible thinges / weeren
 apreynted in to sowles / fro bodies with-owte forth / as who seyth / 20
 at thilke stoyciens wenden þat the sowle hadde ben naked of it
 elf / as a Myroure or a cleene parchemyn / so þat alle fygyres mosten
 yst comyn fro thinges fro with-owte / in to sowles / and ben aprent-
 d in to sowles / /texte/ / Ryht as we ben wont somtyme by a swyfte 24
 wyntel / to ficchen lettres emprientyd in the smothernesse or in the
 pleyennesse of the table of wax / or in parchemyn þat ne hath no
 igure ne note in it / /glose/ /but now arguith bocce ayenis the
 pynyon and seyth thus / but yif the thryuyng sowle ne vnpleyteth 28
 no thing / þat is to seyn ne dooth no thing by his propre moeuynge
 out suffreth and lith to tho figures and to tho notes of bodies with-
 owte forth / & yildeth ymages ydel and veyn in the Manere of a
 Myroure / whennes² thryueth thanne / or whennes comth thilke know- 32

¹ leaf 168, back.

BOETHIUS.

² gloss: quoniam.

yng in owre sowle / þat decernith *and* byholdeth alle thinges/ *and*
whennes is thilke strengthe þat biholdeth the synguler thinges/ *or*
whennes is the strengthe þat deuydeth thinges / .I-knowe / *and* thilke
4 strengthe þat gaderith to-gidere the thinges deuyded/ *and* the
strengthe þat chesith his entrechawngyd wey/ /ffor som tyme it
heuith vp the heuyd / þat is to seyn / þat it heuith vp the entencion
to Ryht heye thinges¹/ *and* som tyme it dessendith in to ryht lowe
8 thinges²/ *and* whan it retorneth in to hym self it reproeueth *and*
distroyet the false thinges by the trewe thinges/ /Certes this strengthe³
is cause moore efficient / *and* mochel moore myhty to sen *and* to
knowe thinges/ /thanne thilke cause þat suffreth *and* resseyuyth the
12 notes *and* the figures Inpressed in manere of matere/ /Algates the
passion/ þat is to seyn the suffraunce or the wit in the qwyke body /
goth byforn exitinge *and* moeuyng the strengthis of the thoght//
ryht so as whan þat cleernes smyteth the eyen *and* moeueh hem
16 to sen / *or* ryht so as voys or sown hurtelith to the Eeres *and* com-
moeueh hem to herkne / than is the strengthe of the thoght I-moeued
and excited *and* clepith forth to semblable moeuynges the spes
þat it halt with-inne it self/ *and* addeth tho spes to the notes *and*
20 to the thinges with-owte forth / *and* medlith the ymages of thinges
with-owte forth to tho formes I-hidde with-inne hym self

¶ The .5.th prose [margin, leaf 170]

24 **B**Vt what yif þat in bodies to ben feelid / þat is to seyn in
the takynge of knowleching of bodyly thinges ⁴And al be
it so þat the qualites of bodies þat ben obiecte fro with-owte-
forth / moeuen *and* entalenten the Instrumentz of the wittes//
and al be it so þat the passion of the bodi þat is to seyn the witte
or the suffraunce / goth to-forn the strengthe of the workynge corage /
28 the which passion or suffraunce clepith forth the dede of the thoght
in hym self / *and* moeueh *and* exiteth in this mene while the formes
þat restin with-inne forth/ *and* yif þat insensibele bodies as I haue
seyd / owre corage nis nat I-tawht / *or* emprienpted / by passion⁵ to
32 knowe thise thinges/ /but demyth *and* knoweth of his owne strengthe

¹ gloss: .i. principijs.

² gloss: .s. conclusiones.

³ gloss: .s. anima.

⁴ leaf 170, back.

⁵ gloss: non ex natura rei.

passion) or suffraunce subiect to the body Moche moore thanne
hinges þat ben absolut *and* quite fro alle talent; or affeccions of
as / as god or hise Aungelis / ne folwin nat in discernynge thinges
t fro *with-owt*eforth/ /but they acomplyssen *and* spedin the 4
of hir thoht / by this reson) thanne ther comyn many maner
rynges to diuerse *and* differynge substances/ /ffor the wit of the
/ the whiche wit is naked *and* despoyled of alle oother know-
s / thilke wit comth to beestis / þat ne mowe nat moeuen hem 8
/ her *and* ther as oystrys *and* musculis *and* other swiche shelle
of the see / þat clyuen / *and* ben norysshed to Rochis¹/ /but
ymaginacion) comth to Remuable beestis þat semyn to han
it to fleen or to desiren any thing / but reson) is al oonly to the 12
ge of mankynde / ryht as intelligence is oonly the deuyne nature /
hich it folweth / þat thilke knowynge is moore worth thanne
oother / syn it knoweth by his propre nature / nat oonly his
et / as who seyth it ne knoweth nat al oonly / þat apertieneth 16
erly to his knowynge/ /but it knoweth the subiect; of alle oother
vynges/ /but² how shal it thanne be / yif þat wit *and* ymagina-
stryuen ayein resonyng / *and* seyn that ³of thilke vniuersels
ges þat Reson) weenith to sen þat it nis ryht nawht/ /for wit *and* 20
ginacion) seyn / þat that / þat is sensible / or ymaginable / it ne
nat be vniuersel / thanne is eyther the Iugement of reson) soth
at ther nis no thing sensible⁴ / or elles for þat reson) wot wel þat
y thinges ben subiect to wit / *and* to ymagynacion)/ /thanne is 24
concepcion) of reson) veyn *and* false which þat looketh *and* com-
endith þat þat is sensible *and* synguler as vniuersel/ /*and* yif þat
n) wolde answeren ayein to thise two / þat is to seyn to witte *and*
maginacion) / *and* seyn þat soothly she hir self / þat is to seyn 28
n) / lokith *and* comprehendith by reson) of vniuersalite / bothe þat
is sensible / *and* þat that is ymaginable / And þat thilke two þat
seyn wit *and* yma[gina]cion) ne mowen nat stretchen ne en-
sen hem self to knowy of vniuersalite / for þat the knowynge of 32
/ ne may exceden ne surmonite the bodyly figures/ /Certes of the

¹ *gloss* : .i. saccis.² *gloss* : quoniam.³ leaf 171.⁴ *gloss* : quod absurdum est.

knowinge of thinges / men owhten rather yeuen credence to the moore
stidefast / and to the moore parfyt Iugement/ /In this manere
stryuynge thanne we þat han strengthe of resonynge / and of
4 ymaginyng and of wit / þat is to seyn / bi reson / and by ymagin-
acion and bi wit / and we sholde rathir preyse the cause of reson /
as who seyth than the cause of wit and of ymaginacion/ /Semblable
thing is it þat the Resoun of mankynde / ne weeneth nat / þat the
8 deuyne intelligence bi-holdith or knoweth thinges to comyn/ /but ryht
as the Reson of mankynde knoweth hem/ /ffor þou arguiste¹ / and seyst
thus / þat yif it seme nat to men / þat some thinges han certeyn / and
necessarye bytydinges / they ne mowen nat ben wyst byforn certeynly
12 to bi-tyden/ /and thanne nist her no prescience of thilke thinges /
and yif we trowe þat prescience be in thise thinges / thanne is ther
no thing / þat it ne bideth bi necessite/ /but ²Certes yif we myhten
han the Iugement of the dyuyne thoght / as we ben parsoneres³ of
16 Reson / ryht so as we han demyd / þat it bi-houith þat Imaginacion
and wit be by-nethe reson / ryht so wolde we demen þat it weere
ryhtful thing / þat mannes Reson owte to submitten it self / and to
ben by-nethe the dyuyne thoght/ /ffor which yif þat we mowen as
20 who seyth þat yif þat we mowen / I conseyle þat we enhance vs in
to þe heihte of thilke souereyn Intelligence/ /ffor ther shal Reson wel
seen þat / þat it ne may nat bi-holden in it self / and certes þat is
this / in what manere the prescience of god seth alle thingis certains
24 and diffinysshed / al though they ne han no certeyn Issues or bitid-
inges / /ne this nis non opinion / but it is rather the symplicite of þe
souereyn science / þat nis nat enclosed / nor I-shet / witkin none
bowndes

¶ The .5.th Metur [margin, leaf 172]

28 **T**he beestis passen bi the Erthes bi ful diuerse figuris for
som of hem han hir bodies strawght & crepin in the /dust /
and drawn after hem a traas or a forwh / I-kountynued /
þat is to seyn / as nadris or snakis/ /and oother beestis by
32 the wandrynge lyhtnesse of hir wyngis betyn the wyndes / and ouer-
swymmyng the spaces of the longe eyr by moyst fleeynge/ /and oother

¹ gloss : disseris.

² leaf 171, back.

³ soneres corrected.

v.] *Man should look upward with his Mind as well as his Eyes.* 133
 ■ 5, PROSE 6.] *Eternity is perfect possession of Endless Life.*

s gladen hem self to diggen hir traas or hir steppis in the Erthe
 hir goyng³ or with hir feet/ *and* ¹to gon eyther bi the greene
 es / or elles to walken vnder the woodes/ *and* al be it so þat þou
 þat they alle discordyn bi diuerse formes / algates hir faces 4
 nyd heuyeth hir dulle wittes/ /Oonly the lynage of man heuyth
 ste his heye heuyd / *and* stondith lyht with his vp-Ryht body /
 r-hooldith the erthes vnder hym/ *and* but yif þou erthely man
 st yuel owt of thi wit / this figure amonestith the þat axest the 8
 ne with thy ryhte visage / *and* hast areysyd thy fore-heuyd to
 a vp a heygh thy corage / so þat thy thoght / ne be nat I-heuyed /
 at lowe vnder foote / syn þat thy body is so heye areysed

¶ The 6th prose and the laste [*margin, leaf 177*]

¶ Herfore thanne as I haue shewyd a litel her byforn / þat alle 12
 thinges þat is I-wyst / nis nat knowen / by his nature propre /
 but bi the nature of hem þat comprehend it / lat vs loke
 — now in as mochel as it is leueful² to vs/ /as who seyth / lat
 ke now as we mowen / which þat the estat is of the deuyne 16
 ance / so þat we mowen ek knowen what his³ science is / the
 nune Iugement of alle creaturis resonablis / thanne is this / þat
 is eterne / Lat vs considere thanne what is eternite ffor certes þat
 shewen vs to-gidere the deuyne nature / *and* the deuyne science / 20
 uite thanne is parfyt possession / *and* al-to gidere of lyf Inter-
 able/ *and* þat shewith moore cleerly / bi the comparison / or
 cion / of temporel thinges/ /ffor alle thing þat lyueth in tyme it
 esent / *and* procedith fro preterit⁴ in to futuris / þat is to seyn 24
 yme passed in to tyme comynge / ne ther nys nothing estab-
 led in tyme / þat may enbracen to-gidere al the space of his lyf//
 certes yit ne hath it nat takyn the tyme of to morwe / *and* it
 lost the tyme of yisterday / *and* certes in the lyf of this day / ye ne 28
 no moore but ryht as in the moeuable *and* transitorye moment//
 ne thilke thing þat suffreth temporel condicion / al thogh þat
 were bygan to be / ne thogh it neuere cese for to be / as Aristotile
 d of the ⁴world / *and* al thogh þat the lyf of it be stretchched 32

¹ gloss: gaudent.

² gloss: .i. fas.

³ gloss: dei.

⁴ leaf 177, back.

with infinite of tyme / yit algates nis it no swych thing / þat men
 myhten trowen by ryht þat it is eterne/ /ffor al thogh þat it compre-
 hende and embrace the space of lyf Infynit / yit algates ne embrasith
 4 it nat the space of the lyf al to-gidere/ /ffor it ne hat nat the futuris
 þat ne ben nat yit / ne it ne hath no lengere the preterit; þat ben
 I-doon / or I-passed but thilke thing thanne þat hath and compre-
 hendith to-gidere al the plente of the lyf Intermynable / to whom
 8 ther ne fayleth nawht of the future / and to whom ther nis nawht of
 þ^e preterite escapyd nor I-passed / thilke same is I-witnesshed / and
 I-proeued by ryht to ben Eterne/ /and it by-houyth by necessite /
 þat thilke þing^e be al wey present to hym self / and compotent / as
 12 who seyt al wey present to hym self / and so myhty þat al be ryht at
 his pleasaunce / and þat he haue al present the Infynyte of the
 moeuable tyme/ /Wherfore som men trowen wrongfulli þat whan
 they heeren / þat it semede / to plato / þat this world / ne hadde
 16 neuere bygynnyng of tyme/ /ne þat it neuere shal han faylynge//
 they weenen in this manere þat this world be makod coeterne with his
 makere / as who seyth / they weene þat this world and god ben makod
 to-gidere eterne / and þat is a wrongful weenyng/ /ffor oother thing is it
 20 to ben I-lad by lyf intermynable / as plato graunted to the world and
 oother thing is it to enbrace to-gydere al the present of the lyf intermyn-
 able / the whiche thing it is cleer and manyfest / þat it is propre to the
 deuyne thought/ /ne it ne sholde nat semen to vs / þat god is Eldere
 24 þanne thinges þat ben I-makod by quantyte of tyme/ /but rather by
 the proprete of his symple nature/ /ffor this ilke infynyt moeuyng of
 temporel thinges / folweth this presentarye¹ estat of lyf vnmoeuable /
 and so as it ne may nat countrefeten it / ne feynen it / ne be euene
 28 lyk to it/ /ffor the inmoeuablete / þat is to seyn þat is in the eternite
 of god / it faileth and falleth in to moeuyng / fro the simplicite of
 the presence of god / and disencresith in to the Infynit quantite of
 future and of preterite/ /and so as it ne may nat han to-gidere al the
 32 plente of the lyf / Algates yit / for as moche as it ne cesith neuere
 for to ben / in som manere / it semith som del to vs / þat it folweth
 and resemblith thilke thing þat it ne may nat atayne to ne fullfyllen//
 and byndith it² self to som manere presensse of this litel and swyfte

¹ leaf 178.

² gloss: .s. mocio temporalis.

ment¹ / /the which presence/ of this lytele *and* swyfte moment / for
 it berith. a manere ymage / or lyknesse / of the ay dwellynge
 sence of god / it graunteth to swyche manere things as it bitydith
 at it semith hem / as thise things han yben / *and* ben/ *and* for 4
 the presence of swych lytel moment ne may nat dwelle/ /ther-for
 auysshed *and* took the Infynyte wey of tyme / þat is to seyn bi
 session/ *and* bi this manere is it I-doon / for þat it sholde con-
 ue the lyf in gooinge / of the whiche lyf / it ne myhte nat embrace 8
 plente in dwellynge/ *and* for-thy yif we wollen putten worthi-
 nes to things *and* folwen plato / lat vs seye thanne sothly / þat
 is eterne / *and* þat the world is perpetuel/ /thanne syn þat euery
 ement knowith *and* comprehendith bi his owne nature things þat 12
 subiect / vn to hym/ /ther is sothly to god / al weys / an Eterne
 presentarie estat / *and* the science of him² þat ouer-passeth al
 poreal moeuement³ dwellith in the symplycite of his presence *and*
 raceth *and* considerith alle the Infynyt spaces of tymes preterit⁴ 16
 futures/ *and* looketh in his symple knowynge alle things of
 terit ryht as they weeren I-doon ⁴presently riht now/ /yif þou wolt
 ne thinke / *and* auyse the prescience / bi which it knoweth alle
 thynges / þou ne shalt nat demyn it as prescience of thynges to comyn / 20
 þou shal demyn it moore ryhtfully / þat it is science of presence /
 of Instaunce / þat neuer ne fayleth/ /ffor which it nis nat yclepyd
 veydence / but it sholde rather ben clepyd purveyaunce/ þat is
 blysshed ful fer fro ryht lowe thynges / *and* byhooldeth from a- 24
 alle thynges ryht as it weere fro the heye heyhte of thynges/ /why
 stow thanne / or why desputestow thanne / þat thilke thynges ben
 bi necessite / whiche þat ben yseyn *and* knowen bi the deuyne
 e / syn þat forsothe men ne maken nat thilke thynges necessarye 28
 þat þat they sen ben I-doon in hir syhte/ /ffor ⁶addith thi bi-hoold-
 any necessite to thilke thynges þat þou bi-hoolddest presente/ /Nay
 I/ /philosophie/ /Certes thanne yif men myhte maken any digne
 parison or collacion of þ^e presence diuine / *and* of þ^e presence of 32
 kynde / ryht so as ye sen some thynges in this temporel present /
 so seth god alle thynges bi his eterne present, /wherfore this

¹ gloss: instantis.

leaf 178, back.

² gloss: .s. dei.

³ gloss: prouidencia.

⁴ gloss: mocio.

⁵ gloss: quoniam.

deuyne prescience / ne chaungeth nat the nature ne the proprete of
things/ /but bi-hooldeth swyche thinges present to hym ward / as
they shullen bityde to yow ward in tyme to comyn/ /ne it ne con-
4 fowndeth nat the Iugement of thinges/ /but bi O syhte of his thowht/
he knoweth the thinges to comyn / as wel neccessarye as nat neccesa-
sarye/ /Ryht so as whan ye seen to-gidere a man walke on the erthe /
and the sonne aysen in the heuene/ /al be it so þat ye sen and bi-
8 holden / þat oon and þat oother to-gidere / yit natheles ye demyn and
discernen / þat that oon is voluntarye and þat oother neccessarie /
Ryht so thanne the deuyng lookynge by-holdynge alle ¹things
vndyr hym / ne trowblith nat the qualite of thinges / þat ben cer-
12 teynly present to hym ward / But as to the condicion of tyme / for-
sothe they ben future/ /ffor which it folweth / þat this nis non
opinion but rather a stidefast knowynge I-strengthened by sothnesse /
þat whanne þat god knoweth any thing to be / he ne vnwot nat that
16 thilke thing wantith neccessite to be/ /this is to seyn þat whan þat
god knoweth any thing to bi-tyde he wot wel þat it ne hath no
neccessite to bityde/ /and yif þou seyst heere þat thilke thing þat god
seth to bityde/ /it ne may nat vnbitide/ /as who seyth it mot bide//
20 and thilke thing þat ne may nat vnbitide it mot bityde bi neccessite /
and þat þou streyne² me bi this name of neccessite/ /Certes I wol wel
confessen and by-knowe a thing of ful sad trowthe / but vnnethe
shal ther any wyht mowe sen it / or come ther-to / but yif þat he be
24 by-holdere of þe deuyne thought/ /ffor I wol answeren the thus / þat
thilke thing þat is future / whan it is referred to the deuyne know-
ynge / thanne is it neccessarye/ /but certis whan it is vndirstondyn in
his owne kynde / men sen it is owtrely free / and absolut fro alle
28 neccessite/ /for certes ther ben two maneres of neccessite / þat oon
neccessite is symple / as thus þat it bihouith bi neccessite / þat alle
men be mortal or dedly/ /A noother neccessite is condicional / as thus
yif þou wost þat a man walketh / it bi-houith bi neccessite þat he
32 walke/ /thilke thing thanne þat any wyht hath I-knowe to be / it ne
may ben non oother weyes thanne he knoweth it to be/ /but this
condicion ne draweth nat with hir thilke neccessite symple/ /ffor

¹ leaf 179.

² gloss : astringas.

tes this necessite condicionel / the propre nature of it ne maketh
 at but the adieccion of the condicion maketh it / ffor no necessite
 constreynyth a man ¹to gon / þat goth bi his propre wil / al be it
 þat whan he goth þat it is necessarie þat he goth / Ryht on this 4
 ne manere thanne yif þat the puruyaunce of god seth any thing
 sent / than mot thilke thinge ben bi necessite / al thogh þat it ne
 re no necessite of his owne nature / but certes the futuris þat
 yden bi freedom of Arbitre / god seth hem alle to-gidere present // 8
 se thinges thanne yif they ben referred to the deuyne syhte /
 anne ben they makid necessarye bi the condicion of the deuyne
 owynge / but certes yif thilke thinges be consideryd bi hem self
 y ben absolut of necessite / and ne forletyn nat ne cesen nat of the 12
 erte of hir owne nature / thanne certes with-owte dowte / alle the
 nges shollen be doon which þat god wot biforn þat they ben to
 nyn / but som of hem comyn and bityden² of free arbitre or of free
 þ / þat al be it so / þat they by tyden / yit algates ne leese they 16
 hir propre nature in beeynge / bi the which fyrst or þat they
 eryn I-doon / they hadden power nat to han bityd / Boece / what is
 to seyn thanne quod I / þat thinges ne ben nat necessarye bi hir
 pre nature / so as they comyn in alle maneres in the lyknesse of 20
 essite / bi the condicion of the deuyne science / philosophic / this
 the difference quod she / þat tho thinges þat I purposede the a
 el her byforn / þat is to seyn the sonne arysynge / and the man
 kyng / þat ther whiles þat thilke thinges ben I-doon / they ne 24
 hte nat ben vndoon natheles þat oon of hem or it was I-doon / it
 yd by necessite þat it was I-doon / but nat that oother / Ryht so
 nit heere þat the thinges þat god hath present / with-owte dowte
 y shollen ben / but som of hem descendith of the nature of thinges 28
 the sonne arysynge / and som descendith of the powere of the
 res as the man walkynge / thanne seyde I no wrong / þat yif þat
 se thinges ben referryd to the deuyne knowynge ³thanne ben they
 cessarye / and yif they ben considerid by hem self thanne ben th[e]y 32
 solut fro the bond of necessite / riht so as alle thinges þat apierith
 shewith to þe wittes / yif þou referre it to reson / it is vniuersel / and

¹ leaf 179, back.

² gloss: profisciscuntur.

³ leaf 180.

yif þou referre it or loke it to it self / than is it singuler / but now
yif þou seyst thus / þat yif it be in my power to chaunge my purpos /
than shal I voyde the puruyaunce of god / whan þat perauenture
4 I shal han chaunged the thinges þat he knoweth byforn / /thane shal
I answere the thus / /Certes þou mayst wel chaungen thy purpos / but
for as mochel as the present sothnesse of the deuyne puruyaunce / bi-
holdeth þat þou mayst chaunge thy purpos / and wheyther þou wolt
8 chaunge it or no / and whyderward þat þou torne it þou ne mayst nat
eschuen the deuyne prescience / ryht as þou ne mayst nat fleen the syhte
of the presente eye / al thowh þat thow torne thy self bi thi free wyl /
in to diuerse accions / but þou mayst seyn ayein / how shal it thanne
12 be / shal nat the deuyne science be chaungyd bi my disposicion /
whan þat I wole O thing now / and now a noother / and thilke
prescience ne semyth it nat to entrechaunge stowndes¹ of knowynge /
as who seyth ne shal it nat seme to vs / þat the deuyne prescience
16 entrechaungeth hise diuerse stowndes of knowynge / so þat it knowe
sum tyme O thing and som tyme the contrarie / /No forsothe quod I /
ffor the deuyne syhte² renneth to-forn and seth alle futures / and
clepith hem ayein / and retorneth³ hem to the presence of his propre
20 knowinge / ne he ne entrechaungeth nat so as þou weenest the
stowndes¹ of for-knowynge / as now this /now þat / but he⁴ ay dwell-
ynge comth by-forn / and embraseth at o strook alle thy mutaciouns /
and this presence to comprehenden / and to sen alle thinges god /
24 ne hath nat taken it of the bitydinge of thinges to come / but of his
propre symplite / and her²-bi is assoyled thilke thing þat þou putttest
alitel her byforn / þat is to seyn / þat it is vnworthy thyng to seyn /
þat owre futures yeuyn cause of the science of god / ffor certes this
28 strengthe of the deuyne science / which þat embraceth alle thinges bi
his presentarye knowinge / establisseth manere to alle thinges / and it
ne oweth nawht to lattere⁶ thinges / and syn þat thise thinges ben thus /
than is ther freedom of arbitre / þat dwelleth hool and vn-wemmyd
32 to Mortal men / ne the lawes ne purposen nat wykkedly Medes and
paynes to þe wyllinges of men / þat ben vnbownden and quide of all
necessite / and god byholdere and for-witere of alle thinges dwelleth

¹ gloss: vices.

² gloss: intuitus.

³ gloss: retorques.

⁴ gloss: .s. deus.

⁵ leaf 180, back.

⁶ gloss: posterioribus.

BOOK V.] *The present Eternity of God's Sight rewards the Good, torments* 139
 BOOK 6.] *the Ill. Eschew Vice; love Virtue; pray humbly to God on high.*

·boue / and the present eternite of his sihte renneth alwey with the
 iuerse qualite of owre dedes / despensynge and ordeynynge Meedes
 goode men / and torment to wykkedmen/ /ne in ydel ne in veyn
 ben ther nat put in god / hope and preyeris / þat ne mowen ne 4
 n vnspedful ne with-owte effect whan they ben ryhtful//withston
 anne and eschue þou vices// worshiþe and loue þou vertuus / areys
 y corage to ryhtful hopes / yilde þou humble preyeris a heygh/
 et necessite of prowesse and vertu is encharged and commaunded 8
 yow yif ye nyl nat dissimulen/ /syn þat ye workyn and doon þat
 to seyn / yowre dedes / or yowre workes by-forn the eyen of þe Iuge
 t seth and demyth alle thinges/ /To whom be goye & worshiþe bi
 fynyt tymes / A. M. E. N.

12

rplicit expliceat ludere scriptor eat
 nito libro sit laus et gloria Christo
 rpore scribentis sit gratia cunctipotentis

LOSSARIAL AND GENERAL INDEX.

By W. M. WOOD.

- 113/26, to be abashed,
 1.
 , 3/20, abashed.
 '14, abashed.
 26, suffers.
 blynge, 16/32, 69/1, en-
 3, abode.
 21, above.
 e, 117/11, curtailing.
 1, to wait.
 25/32, expecting.
 27, suffer.
 /11, sufferest, endurest.
 is, 3/12, Grecian schools,
 nies.
 purchase.
 115/7, Achelous.
 , 117/24, Achemenia.
 11/15, achieved, accom-
 2/29, choke.
 , 72/19, accomplish.
 ed, 105/33, accomplished.
 49/9, agreeing.
 3, 111/23, agreement.
 12/2, agreeing, unani-
 /30, accord.
 0/8, agree.
 3/17, live in accord.
 st, 33/7, accounted.
 e, 4/4, calculation.
 6/2, soothed, quieted.
 , the, 2/21.
 5/23, authors.
 /5, informer.
- Adden, 65/16, add.
 Adieccion, 137/1, addition.
 Adrad, 30/8, in fear, afraid.
 Adressynge, 126/28, directing, con-
 trolling.
 A fer, 54/20, afar.
 Affryke, 42/2, Africa.
 Agamenon, 114/12, Agamemnon.
 Agast, 30/9, 59/21, 60/3, 84/1, aghast,
 afraid, frightened.
 Agasten, 84/16, to frighten.
 Agastyth, 109/22, terrifies, fright-
 ens.
 Agoon, 54/33, ago.
 Agreeable, 32/33, 62/22, pleasant,
 sweet.
 Agrysen, 5/28, to be afraid, dread.
 Agryseth, 16/27, dreadeth.
 Agrysyst, 21/2, dreadest.
 A heygh, 133/10, on high.
 Ajuged, 9/20, adjudged.
 Akkornes, 95/26, acorns.
 Aknowe, 10/20, 96/10, acknow-
 ledged.
 Albyn, 9/21, 11/30, a Consul at
 Rome.
 Alcidiades, 63/24, Alcibiades.
 Alder fayrest, 68/17, fairest of all.
 Alderfirst, 5/29, first of all.
 Aldermost, Aldermoost, 97/10, 122/
 27, most of all.
 Alderworst, 122/26, worst of all.
 Al gates, Allegates, 12/9, 53/17, 63/
 29, yet, nevertheless.
 Allegged, 96/20, alleviated.
 Allone, 74/9, alone.
 Almest, 84/30, almost.

- Al owtterly, 85/17, utterly.
 Altorenden, 110/10, tear all in pieces.
 Alwey, 56/8, away.
 Alyaunce, 110/7, alliance.
 Alyene, 18/6, to alienate.
 Alyter, 98/29, a little.
 Amenused, 9/1, diminished.
 Amenuseth, 11/34, lesseneth, diminisheth.
 Amenysed, 27/32, diminished.
 Amesureth, 21/16, measureth.
 Amoeved, Amoved, 2/31, 15/3, moved.
 Amonestith, 133/8, admonisheth.
 Amonestyng, 115/28, admonition, exhortation.
 Amonges, 41/10, amongst.
 Amonicion, 7/25, admonition.
 Amynystryth, 105/26, administers.
 Anaxogore, 6/18, Anaxagoras.
 Ancre, 28/9, 39/6, anchor.
 Anguisseth, 62/20, tormenteth.
 Angwissos, 28/19, anxious, sorrowful.
 Angwyssh, Angwysse, 28/26, 62/2, grief, misery, anguish.
 Angwyssos, 66/25, anxieties.
 An hegh, 119/12, on high.
 Anoy, 84/16, annoying.
 Anoye, 28/15, be not grieved, sorry.
 Anoyeden, 110/16, annoy.
 Anoyos, 3/30, 14/19, annoying, hurtful.
 Anoyously, 63/5, dangerously, hurtfully.
 Answery, 94/1, answer.
 Antheus, 115/12, Antæus.
 Antonius (Caracalla), 59/28.
 Aparailleth, 4/9, adorneth.
 Aparaylementus, 34/16, clothing, ornament.
 Apareylen, Aparelyn, 11/11, 23/11, array, apparel.
 Aparayles, 92/11, apparel.
 Aparseyvede, 81/14, perceived.
 Apartienyth, 84/33, appertaineth.
 Apassed, 31/28, passed away.
 Apayed, 32/28, pleased, satisfied.
 Apayred, 16/8, impaired.
 Apaysede, 115/13, appeased.
 Apeeren, 4/9, appear.
 Apercyyd, 10/1, apperceived.
 Apermánides, 83/15, Parmenides.
 Apertienen, 57/10, appertain.
 Apertly, 11/1, 70/16, plainly.
 Apetid, 76/19, appetite.
 Aposyd, 15/33, opposed.
 Aprentyd, 129/23, emprinted.
 Apresse, 39/28, oppress.
 Aproche, 19/16, 112/32, 123/20, approach.
 Apurgynge, 99/1, a purging.
 Aquylon, 16/28, 26/30, the wind.
 Arayseth, 92/18, raiseth.
 Arbitre, 119/28, 121/7, will, free will.
 Archadie, 95/21, Arcadia.
 Arcturus, Arctour, 14/13, 103/7, the star.
 Ardaunt, 94/28, ardent.
 Aresten, 21/34, to stop, arrest.
 Aretten, 27/12, ascribe to, impute to.
 Areysen, 86/21, rise.
 Areysyd, 133/9, raised.
 Aristotile, Arystotele, Arystotulia, 63/21, 116/33, 133/31, Aristotle.
 Armures, 4/21, 35/18, 92/14, armour, arms.
 Arpiis, 115/1, the Harpies.
 Arraced, 6/11, 18/6, 77/21, 117/31, to tear, separate.
 Arthow, Artow, 4/23, 7/21, 32/19, art thou.
 Arwys, 115/1, arrows.
 Arysith, 111/26, arises.
 Arysynges, 14/3, 43/16, 103/12, risings.
 Aryve, 39/6, come on shore.
 Aryvede, 95/10, brought on shore.
 Asayle, 37/39, to assail.
 Ascapyn, 98/17, escape.
 Assemble, 62/30, gather together, amass (money).
 Aspere, 21/26, 63/6, sharp, rough.
 Aspre, 48/19, sharp.
 Asprenesse, 98/34, sharpness.
 Assaied, 28/34, essayed.
 Assaye, 17/4, test.
 Assaye, 19/1, say.
 Assoyled, 138/25, absolved.
 Assoylen, 116/2, 120/6, to absolve, pay, dissolve.
 Assyngned, 110/24, assigned.
 Ast, 18/20, hast.
 Asthonyng, 4/24, astonishment.
 Astoned, 3/20, 49/16, astonished.
 Astonyd, 95/3, stupid.

- 102/26, astonishment.
 4/4.
 18, taste.
 29/8, to reach, attain.
 32, 54/32, attained.
 32, 107/27, tempering,
 ment.
 8/13, moderate.
 9/21, modest.
 4/8, 14/8, 111/23, moder-
 npering.
 e, 126/28, controlling.
 Atteyneth, 90/15, 46/24,
 thenis, 15/13, 129/14,
 a tree.
 4/12, Atrides.
 /18, in two.
 /20, authority.
 61/13, ancestors.
 5, 26/28, the cold wind.
 Autumpne, 4/10, 14/11,
 /27, fall down.
 28/15, advanced,
 1/21, boast.
 e, 11/33, boasting.
 Aventuros, 18/28, 27/14,
 3/6, event.
 1/6, 94/28, avarice.
 5/20, consider, advise.
 e si praesentiam [prae-
 other MSS.] pensare
 cuncta dinoscit.
 3/5, snares.
 14/32, one who lies in
 5, ought.
 asked.
 12, 18/10, askest thou.
 ever.
 nge, 135/2, ever-dwell-
 enis, 5/32, 6/9, 77/1,
 29/13, on the contrary,
 her hand.
 17, again.
 /30, 35/6, Bacchus, the
 ine.
 Bar, 2/28, 26/3, bore.
 Barayne, Bareyne, 21/31, 90/18,
 barren.
 Baren me an hand, 12/18, accuse
 me falsely.
 Basilicis, 9/28, one of Boethius's
 accusers.
 Basynnes of bras, 103/17, cymbals.
 Basyns, 103/21, basins.
 Bataylen, 11/22, 113/6, to war, to do
 battle.
 Beemes, 5/13, 61/23, beams.
 Beeryn, 109/10, bear.
 Belated, 58/22, hated.
 Ben, 11/2, been.
 Ben, 62/22, bees.
 Beneme, 29/30, deprive of, take
 away.
 Bere, 111/15, the Bear, i.e. the Polar
 star.
 Beren, Beryn, 57/1, 133/10, bear.
 Besekyn, 123/20, beseech.
 Bestys, 62/10, beasts.
 Bet, 24/29, be.
 Bet, 39/15, 49/17, better.
 Beternesses, 29/17, bitternesses.
 Betith, 5/11, beateth.
 Bihetist, 47/20, promised.
 Bisegyð, 95/22, besieged.
 Bittre, 6/25, bitter.
 Blake, 19/5, 79/8, black.
 Blases, 103/22, blasts.
 Blawndyssynge, 20/13, 23/13, 84/6,
 flattery, blandishment.
 Bleched, 37/15, bleached.
 Blemished, 13/3, abused.
 Blende, 19/17, blind.
 Blysfulnesse, 29/6, happiness.
 Blysse, 26/7, blessings.
 Blyssed, 37/43, blessed.
 Blythenesse, 25/27, joyfulness.
 Boch, 56/25, botch, blain, sore.
 Bodith, 111/20, foretelleth.
 Boekys, 15/29, books.
 Boere, Boor, 95/16, 115/15, boar.
 Boetes, 103/10, the star Boötes.
 Bole, 63/14, bull.
 Boot, 41/27, did bite.
 Bordure, 2/20, border, hem.
 Borias, Boryas, 5/10, 14/11, Boreas.
 Bossel, 9/9, bushel (a corn measure).
 Bosses, 50/24, bushes, weeds.
 Bosten, 61/27, to boast.
 Botine, 7/9, 19/8, bottom.

- Bowhte, 9/9, bought.
 Bownte, 39/7, 73/23, goodness.
 Bowntes, 12/13, 27/28, good qualities, kindnesses.
 Bowonte, 83/5, bounty.
 Boylynge tempestes, 26/31.
 Brende, 84/2, 115/7, burnt.
 Brenne, 12/7, to burn.
 Brennyng, 43/23, burning.
 Brennynge, 2/5, shining.
 Brode, 34/14, broadly, plainly.
 Brode shewynge, 47/5, vast expanse.
 Brotel, 63/11, brittle.
 Browht, 78/23, 129/16, brought.
 Brutel, 31/10, brittle, fragile.
 Brutelnesse, 40/1, brittleness, frailty.
 Brutus, 47/15.
 Brwtel, 63/9, brutal, bestial.
 Bryddes, Brydys, 95/5, 115/1, birds.
 Brydlis, Brydul, 15/17, 49/7, bridles, curbs.
 Brykes, 64/10 [Addit. MS. 10,340 'Crikes,' creeks], A.-Sax. *bryce*, E. E. *bruche*, *briche*, break, breach.
 Brystelede, 115/15, bristly.
 Busirides, 41/33, Busiris.
 Bybled, 53/26, covered over with blood.
 Bydewith, 111/30, watereth.
 Bydolven, 117/5, buried.
 Byen, 9/5, 27/23, buy.
 Byfallen, Byfallyn, 5/28, 20/16, befallen.
 Byfile, 8/8, befell.
 Byform, 9/20, 21/5, before.
 Bygyled, 16/24, 67/13, beguiled.
 Bygyng, 112/10, beginning.
 Bygynne, 116/24, beginner.
 Byhest, 116/2, promise.
 Byheten, 54/30, promise.
 Byhetyng, 48/5, promising.
 Byhoveth, 7/23, behoveth.
 Byhyhten, 55/16, 67/10, promised.
 Byhynde, 84/27, behind.
 Bykynwen, 70/34, 113/24, acknowledged.
 Bylde, 30/30, build.
 Byleeven, 46/27, believe.
 Byleevest, 18/27, believest.
 By names, 66/7, additional names.
 Bynethe, 34/3, beneath.
 Bynomen, 55/18, taken from.
 Bynymyth, 93/11, taketh away.
 Byrafte, Byrefte, 52/22, 114/31, be-reft.
 Byreven, 62/30, bereave.
 Byrthe, 61/22, birth, origin.
 Byryht, 73/22, by right.
 Bysechen, Byshechen, 63/1, 68/4, beseech.
 Bysien, 4/5, to trouble.
 Bysowhte, 84/12, besought.
 Byspetten, 57/22, defouled.
 Bystowed, Bystowyd, 15/31, 83/22, bestowed.
 Bysyen, 101/26, trouble.
 Bysynesse, 56/15, labour, toil.
 Bytakest, 21/27, entrustest.
 Bytwene, Bytwyen, 25/31, 39/1, between.
 Bytwixen, 2/23, betwixt.
 Bytydde, Bytyde, 55/3, 109/17, happened.
 Bytydden, 121/12, befall.
 Bytydeth, 13/4, 20/15, betides, happens.
 Bytydyng, 116/14, happening.
 Bytyng, 50/7, biting, sharp.
 Bytyng, 56/15, heavy, severe.
 Bytyngly, 46/21, sarcastically.
 Bywaylen, 23/29, bewail.
 Bywepete, 114/24, wept for.
 Bywepetest, 17/15, bewept.
 Byweyledest, 17/15, bewailedst.
 Byweyleth, 95/29, bewaileth.
 Calyope, 84/9, Calliope.
 Cankyr, 16/20, 22, Cancer.
 Canyos, Canyus, 6/20, 11/6.
 Carayne, 91/1, carcase, corpse.
 Cariages, 9/2, taxes.
 Caste, 28/28, chaste.
 Castete, 25/18, chastity.
 Catoun, Caton, 47/16, 108/19, Cata.
 Catullus, 56/24.
 Caucasus, 45/4, the mountain.
 Caudencius, 9/31, one of Boethius's accusers.
 Caytyf, 13/16, 90/20, a wretched man.
 Celebrable, 114/29, commendable, noted.
 Celere, 23/33, cellar.
 Centauris, 114/30, Centaurs.
 Ceptre, 2/29, 43/19, sceptre.
 Cerberus, 84/13, 115/3, the porter of hell.

- Jerteyn, 132/10, 23, cer-
 /5, truly.
 /29, cease.
 le, 41/10, claimed.
 /26/29, carts, carriages.
 /2/13, chairs.
 s, 26/21, chariots.
 , 112/22, to chastise.
 poems, "The Former
 6; and "Fortune," 38.
 3/29, 25/29, chair, seat.
 /16, 7/17, face, counten-
 17/22, cherish.
 3/28, choose.
 30/5, chooseth.
 18/10, chain.
 7, 103/22, the wind.
 as, 7/10, furnaces.
 17/27, cleft, chink. L.
 ualli robore.' [Addit.
 340 schynyng, shining?]
 e, 16/26, groaning.
 look of *Divination*, 125/6.
 32, circus.
 '12, Circe.
 urree, 35/7, 36/16, a kind
 .
 , 35/17, trumpets.
 /9, bright.
 , 26/20, brightness.
 21, call.
 14/6, askest.
 /34, call.
 9/9, callest.
 , serene.
 3/9, stick, cling, adhere.
 , 87/3, cloudless.
 , 45/3, climbed, ascended.
 /10, pieces of torn clothes.
 1/9, fissure, cleft.
 2/25, climb.
 '9/22, clingeth.
 , 41/22, 105/9, cleaving,
 s.
 n, 9/7, coemption.
 134/17, coeternal.
 23/10, cover, obscure.
 , 97/20, collations.
 128/29, comparison.
 74/10, troubled.
 3/25, grow up.
 12/10, convicted.
 MIUS.
 Commoevede, 84/11, moved.
 Commoevyng, 7/8, moving.
 Compaignie, 56/16, company.
 Comparysoned, 45/32, compared.
 Compaygne, 9/13, Campania.
 Compleyde, 3/25, complained.
 Complyssen, 96/24, accomplish.
 Compotent, 134/11, having the
 mastery.
 Compowne, 68/15, to compose.
 Compownen, 73/5, compose, form.
 Comprendyd, 4/3, comprehended.
 Comunalitees, 8/6, commonwealths.
 Comune, 11/28, common.
 Comyn, 1/9, 14/8, come.
 Condicional, 136/30, conditional.
 Condysyn, 33/27, condition.
 Confederacie, 41/26, conspiracy.
 Confuse, 103/2, confused.
 Confwndeth, 18/34, confoundeth.
 Confwndyd, 18/16, confounded.
 Congregasyn, 56/26, collection.
 Coningaste, 8/25, Conigastus.
 Conjecte, Conjecten, 17/20, 73/15,
 conjecture.
 Conjecteth, 120/23, conjectures.
 Conjoined, 57/11, conjoined.
 Conjunction, 80/4, union.
 Conjuracion, 11/8, 41/25, conspiracy.
 Conseite, 70/7, opinion.
 Consequens, 65/33, consequence.
 Consoler, 9/16, councillor.
 Constreynede, 2/10, contracted.
 Constreynyth, 116/20, restraineth,
 governeth.
 Consulers, 40/26, consuls.
 Consumpte, 47/19, consumed.
 Contemplative life, the, 2/22.
 Contienen, 90/31, contain.
 Contieneth, 128/16, containeth.
 Contrarios, 13/15, adverse.
 Contraryen, 119/20, to be opposed
 to, adverse to.
 Contre, 29/10, contrary.
 Contumacion, 110/6 [? continua-
 cion].
 Convenable, 107/34, fit, convenient.
 Convict, 12/15, convicted.
 Cop, 30/30, top, summit.
 Corage, 4/20, 7/21, 12/21, 53/27,
 70/8, mind, spirit, courage.
 Coribandes, 103/19, name of people
 who think the moon is enchanted
 when she is eclipsed.

- Coriged, 97/30, corrected.
 Corigit, 113/4, correcteth.
 Corolarye, 72/2, 93/23, corollary.
 Corompen, 77/15, corrupt.
 Corone, Coroune, 72/2, 93/1, crown.
 Coroumpynge, 81/13, corruption.
 Corsed, 36/27, cursed.
 Corsednesse, 71/10, cursedness.
 Corumpe, 75/27, 114/4, to become corrupt.
 Corupsyun, 56/26, corruption, fetid matter.
 Cosynes, 83/24, consins.
 Countrefeten, 134/27, to counterfeit.
 Coupable, 5/23, guilty.
 Coveiteden, 40/27, coveted.
 Covenable, 76/21, 77/13, fit, convenient.
 Covertoures, 92/11, 124/12, coverings.
 Coverylt, 20/33, covereth.
 Covetise, Coveytise, Coveytyse, 9/18, 12/19, 23/15, 56/12, covetousness.
 Coveyten, 47/8, covet.
 Covynes, 13/20, deceits, collusions.
 Cowched (printed 'towched'), 23/34, laid, set. L. jacere.
 Cowpeled, 124/3, coupled.
 Cowth, 16/4, known.
 Coyn, 36/20, money.
 Creat, 78/6, created.
 Crepin, 132/29, creep.
 Cresus, 23/23, Crœsus, the king of the Lydians.
 Crop, 54/7, top.
 Cruwel, Crwel, 1/15, 84/5, cruel.
 Crwelte, 10/5, cruelty.
 Cryed, 9/11, decreed.
 Curacion, 17/6, cure.
 Cure, 28/3, care.
 Cyprian, the accuser of Albinus, 9/22.
 Cyrus, the king, 23/23.
 Cyte, 51/2, seat.
 Cytesenis, 15/15, citizens.
 Dalf, 35/23, 117/4, dug, delved.
 Dampnacion, 10/8, condemnation.
 Dampned, 12/12, condemned.
 Damysel, 20/23, damsel.
 Dar, 26/18, dare.
 Darsthow, 32/16, darest thou.
 Dartes, 102/4, weapons.
 Daunten, 60/10, subdue.
 Dawntede, 114/30, subdued.
 Debonayre, Deboneyre, 14/9, 48/4, gentle.
 Debonayrely, 95/20, mildly.
 Deceyvable, 63/28, deception.
 Deceyvable, 60/18, deceptive.
 Decorat, 57/1, Decoratus, a buffoon and informer.
 Decretus, 10/23, decrees.
 Dede, 43/14, dead.
 Dede, 36/28, did.
 Deef, 1/15, deaf.
 Deepliche, 124/32, deeply.
 Dcere, 25/14, dear.
 Deeyn, 111/18, to dye.
 Defaute, 11/14, fault, defect.
 Defendowr, 77/2, defender.
 Defeted, 20/1, enfeebled, weakened.
 Deffaute, 90/1, default.
 Deffendeth, 46/27, forbiddeth.
 Deffendyd, 23/8, forbidden.
 Deffonysshe, 116/13, defines.
 Deffyned, 52/14, defined.
 Deficulte, 44/32, difficulty.
 Defowled, 12/18, 115/7, defiled.
 Defowlen, 57/22, defile.
 Defowlyth, 54/4, defouleth.
 Degrees, 2/23, steps.
 Delices, Delyces, 26/3, 53/12, 62/5, 63/8, delights, voluptuousness, pleasures.
 Delitable, 20/18, delectable.
 Delitably, 85/6, delightfully.
 Delites, Delyc3, 62/1, 66/22, delights.
 Delvere, 117/14, a digger.
 Delye, 2/14, thin, fine.
 Demestow, 10/17, deemest thou.
 Dempne, 39/17, condemn.
 Denoyed, 69/22, 81/8, denied.
 Denyestow, 100/14, deniest thou.
 Dep, 79/10, deep.
 Departen, 117/27, separate.
 Departyd, 19/13, separated.
 Depnesse, 3/27, depth.
 Deppere, 17/20, 24/31, deeper.
 Dereworthe, 21/9, 28/6, precious.
 Derked, 2/19, darkened.
 Derken, Derkin, 93/28, 118/31, obscure, darken.
 Discovereth, 5/12, discovered.
 Descreccion, 73/1, discretion.
 Descryven, 78/20, describe.
 Descussed, 5/3, dispersed, scattered.

- disdain.
 disarm.
 deserts.
 desires.
 1, inordinate.
 6, spend, expend.
 1, dispute.
 despise.
 1, despises.
 descends.
 15/31, separation.
 128, deceivable.
 16, dissevered.
 82/24, deceiver
 9, 17/24, 26/2, 74/
 77/1, severity.
 15, hindered, pre-
 3, disturbs.
 stracted.
 2/25, constrained,
 1/2, destined.
 1, fatal.
 destiny, fate.
 12, determine.
 h.
 divinity.
 division.
 yed, coloured.
 5/9, die.
 7, defined.
 1/31, worthy, just.
 1nely, 42/11, 70/1,
 dignity.
 kened.
 darkness.
 1/22, discordant.
 107/23, disagree.
 53/16, disagreeing,
 3, judgment, reason.
 1/26, to disdain.
 14/30, decreaseth.
 desert.
 116/20, disorder.
 18, disposed.
 3, disposeth.
 14/31, spoil, prey.
 6/11, disputation.
 Dissertes, 122/34, deserts.
 Dissimulen, 139/9, to dissemble.
 Dissimuloure, 38/23, dissembler.
 Dissipule, Dyssyple, 62/18, 68/3,
 disciple.
 Distemperaunce, 90/23, intemper-
 ance.
 Distempre, 94/34, intemperate.
 Distingwed, 32/19, distinguished.
 Dite, 23/31, 60/20, ditty, play,
 tragedy.
 Divers, 70/31, diverse.
 Diversaly, 19/11, going by different
 routes.
 Dolve, 117/8, should dig.
 Domes, 107/22, judgments.
 Domesman, 43/14, judge.
 Domesthow, 18/19, knowest thou.
 Don, 3/22, do.
 Doom, 118/14, judgment.
 Dowblede, 84/10, doubled.
 Dowhlesesse, 37/33, duplicity.
 Dowble vysage, 20/32, two-faced-
 ness.
 Dowgter, 28/32, daughter.
 Dowmb, 4/27, dumb.
 Dowtest, 17/21, doubttest.
 Dowtos, Dowtous, Dowtows, 2/9,
 20/32, 48/22, 73/9, doubtful,
 doubted.
 Drawestow, 125/23, drawest thou.
 Drawht, 111/8, draught.
 Drede, 59/16, dread.
 Dredeles, 83/32, fearless.
 Dredful, 95/1, timid.
 Dressinge, 107/10, directing, order-
 ing.
 Dressyth, 110/32, directeth.
 Dreynt, Dreynte, 1/18, 3/27, 114/25,
 115/8, drowned, drenched.
 Dronken, Dronkyn, 35/12, 95/25,
 drank.
 Drowh, 8/33, drew.
 Dryf, 19/15, drive.
 Dulleth, 3/28, to become dull.
 Durablete, 78/2, durableness.
 Duren, 58/4, 76/13, 77/6, endured, to
 last.
 Dureth, 58/30, endureth.
 Dusked, 2/18, dusky.
 Dwwe, 14/17, due, orderly.
 Dwwelly, 14/19, duly.
 Dydalus, 82/25, Dædalus.
 Dyffynyssed, 69/17, defined.

- Dylsysos, 24/31, delicious.
 Dyomedes, 115/5, Diomede.
 Dyrk, 65/19, dark.
 Dyrke, 60/16, evil, wicked.
 Dyrked, 3/19, darkened.
 Dysmaye, 24/5, dismay.
 Dyspeyre, 20/7, despair.
 Dyvydyd, 105/14, divideth.
 Dyvynenge, 122/8, divination.
 Dyvynor, 122/8, diviner.

 Eched, 60/27, increased.
 Echynnys, 64/16, sea-urchins.
 Eclipse, 103/19, eclipse.
 Eftsones, 54/10.
 Egal, 47/14, equal.
 Egaly, 122/4, equally, evenly.
 Egalyte, 29/14, equality, evenness (of mind).
 Egge, 36/19, edge.
 Egre, 16/19, 35/17, sharp, eager.
 Egreablete, 29/14, goodwill.
 Egren, 109/29, urge, excite.
 Ek, 27/32, 37/36, also.
 Elde, 1/9, old age.
 Elden, 44/1, become aged.
 Eldere, 70/15, 134/24, older.
 Eldres, 40/27, 61/27, forefathers.
 Eldyr fadyr, 28/2, grandfather.
 Eliaticis, the school of, 3/12.
 Elles, 17/9, else.
 Elyne, 114/16, Helen.
 Embelysed, 32/15, embellished, adorned.
 Emperice, 37/25, empress.
 Emprienpted, 130/31, imprinted.
 Emted, 2/7, exhausted.
 Enander, 115/13, Evander.
 Enbasshinge, 86/1, a debasing.
 Enbracest, 32/21, embracest.
 Enbraseth, 128/15, embraceth.
 Encharged, 139/8, imposed.
 Enchaunteresse, 95/31, enchantress.
 Enclynynge, 79/4, embracing.
 Encres, 13/4, increase.
 Endamagen, 9/13, damage.
 Enditen, 1/3, to indite.
 Endyd, 98/31 [dedid = made dead, in Dr. Morris's edition].
 Enformasyoun, 20/15, instruction.
 Enformedest, Enformyd, 6/23, 8/2, informed, instructed.
 Enforseth, 20/5, desireth.
 Engendred, 27/3, begotten.

 Enhanseth, 22/9, exalteth.
 Enhawsen, 94/19, advance, **exalt**, enhance.
 Enlaced, 62/28, 115/30, entangled, intertwined, perplexed.
 Enlaceth, 7/18, bindeth.
 Enoynted, 24/29, anointed.
 Enpeyren, 93/28, 108/27, impair.
 Enpoysonynge, 6/18, poisoning.
 Enpreynted, 129/20, imprinted.
 Ensaulple, 4/5, example.
 Ensaulpler, 68/20, exemplar.
 Ensaulpyles, 58/32, examples.
 Enstablyshed, 105/7, established.
 Entalenten, 130/25, excite.
 Entechched, 94/4, defiled, polluted.
 Entente, 10/20, intention.
 Entenden, 117/3, to intend.
 Entendynge, 4/17, intent, looking steadfastly on.
 Entensyn, 17/28, intention.
 Ententes, 3/10, endeavours, labour.
 Ententyf, 6/33, 19/24, attentive.
 Ententyfly, 81/17, attentively.
 Entre, 18/15, 20/14, beginning.
 Entrechaunged, 102/20, interchanged.
 Entrechaungynge, 14/18, 26/32, 102/31, 117/30, interchanging.
 Entrecomunynge, 44/33, commerce, communication.
 Entrelaced, 82/25, intermingled, entangled.
 Entremedled, 42/21, intermixed.
 Entremetith, 82/11, intermeddled.
 Envenymeth, 94/10, poisoneth, infecteth.
 Envyrorynge, 44/12, 112/3, encirclement, circumference.
 Envyrournde, Envyrournede, 22/29, 59/20, surrounded.
 Epicurians, the, 6/5.
 Epicurus, 52/20.
 Ercoles, 42/1, 104/13, 115/6, Hercules.
 Ere, 1/15, ear.
 Ere, 56/14, plough.
 Eres, 49/16, ears.
 Eritage, 6/2, heritage.
 Erste, 75/8, first.
 Erthelyche, Erthelyethe, 41/8, 54/17, earthly.
 Erudice, 84/32, Eurydice.
 Escapin, 28/13, escape.

- 1/15, 16/8, become hot,
 1/30, make hot, chafe.
 0/16, hot, warm.
 ;, avoid.
 15, escheweth.
 /7, eschew.
 t.
 /10, for 'Eftsones.'
 9/8, established.
 , stable, firm.
 20/3, estate, state.
 '22, statutes.
 , more easy.
 eterne, 119/4, 121/10,
 nal, from eternity.
 19, eternity.
 either.
 40/23, Etna.
 at.
 /23, Euphrates.
 , Euripus.
 95/10, the wind.
 62/18, Euripides.
 vening.
 Evenliche, Evenelyk,
 , 111/23, evenly.
 rych, 6/6, 28/7, 77/3,

 12, 20/34, all, every
 thing.
 1/2, evening star.
 /18, to exercise, prac-

 1, 109/8, exercise.
 xcussyon, 8/15, 40/3,

 re, 6/18, 29/9, exile,
 t.
 29, exciteth.
 1/22, eyes.
 3/13, air.
 , heirs.

 1, fade.
 7/15, Fabricius.
 24, fathers.
 ne, 71/3, feign.
 i/33, falsity.
 fanyleres, 6/14, 11/17,

 20/5, familiarity.
 /21, fancy, inclination.
 fashion.

 Fastere, 18/30, quicker.
 Fastne, 14/32, 87/15, fasten.
 Fastnede, 5/18, fastened.
 Fawht, 115/10, fought.
 Faylyde, 51/10, failed.
 Faylynge, 134/16, ending.
 Fayr, 20/10, fair, good.
 Feblere, 65/9, feeble.
 Feblesse, 59/25, 63/27, 87/29, feeble-
 ness.
 Feele fold, 20/4, manifold.
 Feelynge, 76/17, living.
 Feerse, 114/24, fierce.
 Feffedest, 26/1, paid tribute to, en-
 dowedst.
 Felawe, 57/3, fellow-worker.
 Felawes, 48/22, fellows.
 Felawshipith, 86/31, accompaniyeth.
 Felistow, 7/20, feelest thou.
 Fellyche, 26/28, fiercely.
 Felnesse, 16/27, fierceness.
 Felonos, 11/16, 71/19, wicked, de-
 praved.
 Felonos, 7/13, felons.
 Felonyes, 96/31, crimes.
 Fer, Ferre, 15/6, far.
 Ferme, 14/32, make firm.
 Fermely, 122/16, firmly.
 Fern, 50/24, ferns, weeds.
 Ferne, 47/9, far-off, distant.
 Ferthe, 44/17, fourth.
 Fertherest, 106/14, farthest.
 Fesiasien, 5/17, physician.
 Festyvaly, 46/10, gaily.
 Fette, 36/22, fetched.
 Fey, 87/31, faith, truth.
 Feynede, 46/17, feigned.
 Feynen, 134/27, to feign.
 Feynest, 20/2, faintest.
 Fichched, 78/28, fixed, implanted.
 Fille, 33/23, abundance.
 Flaumbe, Flawmbe, Flambe, 26/22,
 40/23, 103/11, 111/18, flame.
 Fleen, 118/15, to be shunned.
 Fleen, 30/33, fly from.
 Fleetyn, 28/12, pass away.
 Fleetynge, 6/30, flitting.
 Fleezes, Flezes, 35/7, 35/9, fleece.
 Fleme, 19/16, banish.
 Flen, 66/15, 97/33, to flee, fly from.
 Fles, 36/18, fleece.
 Fleten, Fletyn, Fletynge, 18/22, 19/
 11, 56/11, 107/8, 117/29, pass
 away, flow.

- Fleth, 62/23, flies.
 Fletith, 4/10, aboundeth.
 Flettynge, 27/2, changing, fickle.
 Flitte, 53/20, 67/8, remove.
 Floteryn, 78/23, float.
 Floterynge, 68/15, floating.
 Flowren, 102/12, flourish.
 Flowrith, 85/24, flourisheth.
 Flyttynge, 21/13, 63/120, fleeting,
 changing, fickle.
 Foddre, 115/4, fodder.
 Foleyen, 52/27, act foolishly.
 Folueth, Folweth, 61/15, 71/7, fol-
 loweth.
 Folyly, 6/30, 107/8, foolishly.
 Fookkes, 8/26, folk, people.
 Fool, 4/15, foul.
 Fool, 24/15, full.
 Fooldesthow, 82/27, foldest thou.
 Forbrak, 85/10, broke, interrupted.
 Fordoon, 49/8, undo, destroy.
 Fordryven, 6/25, driven about.
 Forehevyd, Forheved, 10/3, 133/9,
 forehead.
 Foreyne, 9/30, foreign.
 Forgoon, 63/7, forego.
 Forknowyng, 138/21, foreknow-
 ledge.
 Forlesten (*pret.* of *forleve*), 5/4,
 left.
 Forlete, Forleten, Forletyn, 2/18,
 56/15, 61/30, to forsake, leave,
 neglect.
 Forleteth, Forletith, Forleetheth,
 3/28, 14/15, 34/10, forgetteth,
 leaveth, forsaketh, loses.
 Forlong, 93/1, furlong.
 Forlorn, 94/22, lost.
 Forlyved, 61/29, living.
 Forlyven, 61/20, degenerate from.
 Forpampred, 36/5, overpampered.
 Fors, 38/13, force; 'no fors,' no
 matter.
 Forseyde, 10/8, 128/25, foresaid.
 Forswerynge, 14/24, perjury.
 Forthere, 28/15, 90/13, to further,
 promote.
 Forthi, Forthy, 6/24, 18/19, 28/16,
 therefore.
 Forthinke, 28/15, grieved, sorry.
 Fortroden, 85/25, trodden upon,
 trampled.
 Fortuit, 117/11, fortune.
 Fortune, the blind goddess, 20/33.
 Fortunel, 117/32, fortuitous.
 Fortunous, 17/11, 29/31, 102/26,
 fortuitous.
 Fortunows, 17/9, fortunes.
 Forward, 54/32, foremost.
 Forwes, 36/12, furrows.
 Forwh, 132/30, furrow.
 Forwitere, 138/34, foreknower.
 Foryeeten, 18/20, forgotten.
 Foryetinge, 45/20, forgetfulness.
 Foryetyng, 18/17, 79/20, forget-
 ting.
 Foundement, 77/5, foundation.
 Fowle, 14/30, 31/12, 52/35, bad,
 foul.
 Fowleste, 7/3, foulest.
 Fownden, 62/14, found.
 Fowndyn, 30/26, establish.
 Fram, 14/14, from.
 Freele, 41/14, 48/11, frail.
 Frelenesse, 87/30, frailty.
 Freten, Fretyn, 53/31, 114/25, 115/
 6, devour, eat up.
 Frounce, 5/1, flounce.
 Fructefyng, 3/4, fruitful.
 Fructes, 32/20, fruits.
 Frut, 23/12, fruit.
 Fulfyd, 56/4, fulfilled.
 Fulfylled, 12/34, 25/32, satisfied.
 Fulfyllinge, 62/2, satisfying.
 Furijs, 84/15, the three Furies.
 Futures, *adj. pl.*, 135/17.
 Fwonde, 18/15, found.
 Fychchen, 31/2, 69/6, fix, fasten.
 Fylonye, 56/28, villainy.
 Fylthe, 10/11, vileness.
 Fyn, 54/20, 78/35, end.
 Fynyshed, 97/11, finished.
 Fyrthest, 106/19, furthest.
 Gabbe I?, 34/22, am I deceived?
 Gaddered, 88/15, gathered.
 Gadery, 16/25, gather.
 Gaines, 90/6, gains, rewards. *L.*
leuia aut ludicra praemia.
 Galentyne, 36/16, a dish in ancient
 cookery made of sopped bread
 and spices (*Halliwell*).
 Galles, 37/17, galls.
 Gapeden, 9/19, to desire, be greedy
 for.
 Gapynges, 24/18, desires.
 Garnement, 5/1, garment.
 Gastnesse, 59/13, terror, fear.

- Gayus Cesar Germeynes son**, 11/7.
Gemmys, 36/30, precious stones.
Gentellesse, **Gentilesse**, 40/11, 61/9, nobility.
Geometryens, 71/33, geometricians.
Gerdoned, 93/21, rewarded.
Gerdonynge, 112/20, rewarding.
Gerdoun, **Gerdoun**, 12/1, 94/1, reward.
Gernerres, 9/4, storehouses of corn.
Gesse, **Gessen**, 10/29, 11/26, 51/28, to suppose, estimate, deem.
Gessing, 13/5, 13/12, opinion, supposing.
Gest, 26/12, guest.
Gestys, 41/34, guests.
Gladyn, **Gladyd**, 25/3, 28/31, glad-den.
Glosynge, 26/1, deceitful.
Glotonos, 16/29, greedy.
Gnodded, 36/11, pounded.
Gobet, 35/23, 117/5, a bit (of gold).
Godhed, 95/21, divinity.
Goedes, 32/22, goods.
Goost, 27/30, spirit, ghost.
Goth, 47/10, goeth.
Goths, Theodoric the king of the, 9/3.
Governaunce, 21/32, 57/3, control, government.
Governayle, 17/22, government.
Gouvernementus, 8/12, governments.
Goye, 139/11, joy.
Grauntisthow, 75/20, grantest thou.
Grec, 83/15, Greek.
Greek letters wrought on the dress of Philosophy, 2/21-24.
Gretnesse, 63/13, size.
Grettyst, 83/11, greatest.
Grevos, 8/21, grievous.
Grobbe up, 36/29, grub up.
Grond, 36/15, did grind.
Greynes, 50/25, grains (of corn).
Greythed, 12/8, devised, prepared.
Gyauntz, 82/13, giants.
Gyderesse, 85/12, a female guide.
Gydyngge, 86/22, guiding.
Gynnes, 64/7, snares, traps.
Gyle, 55/23, guile, stratagem.
Gylt, 10/12, guilt, crime.
Gyse, 55/31, 104/32, guise, mode.
Gyser, 84/21, gizzard.

Ha, 81/1, have.
Habownden, 13/20, abound.
Habowndeth, 64/13, abounds.
Habytacule, 44/31, habitation.
Halden, 28/11, to hold.
Haldith, 79/22, holdeth.
Haled, 54/7, pulled.
Haleth, 48/17, draweth, draggeth.
Halt, 39/6, 44/13, 49/10, 87/8, 130/19, holds.
Hap, 116/14, fortune.
Happes, 17/9, haps.
Hardnesse, 102/29, hardship.
Hardyly, 23/6, boldly.
Harmes, 13/3, evils.
Hasted, 1/10, hastened.
Hasthow, 15/18, hast thou.
Hat, 28/30, 59/20, hath.
Hates, **Hatrede**, 9/22, 101/26, hatred.
Haunted, 5/19, frequented.
Haunten, 41/18, to practise, exercise.
Havyngge, 24/22, possessing.
Hawes, 36/7, berries of the dog rose.
Heere, 25/28, their.
Heeres, 1/11, hairs.
Hef, 2/12, raised, heaved.
Hele, **Heele**, 18/16, 52/11, 73/26, health.
Henward, 9/26, those.
Henten, 9/21, to seize.
Henteres, 7/3, hunters.
Hepin, 118/33, heap up, increase.
Hepyth, 102/26, increaseth.
Herberweden, 41/34, harboured, lodged.
Herbyform, 17/15, 60/32, heretofore.
Hercules, 114/29. *See* Ercules.
Heren, 100/13, hear.
Heres, 50/25, ears (of corn).
Herkne, 49/17, harken.
Hertes, 56/19, hearts.
Hertes, 83/32, harts.
Herthe, 119/13, earth.
Herthely, 50/13, earthly.
Hertyd, 43/13, hearted.
Heryed, 86/5, praised.
Herynus, 74/14, the river Hermus.
Hesperus, 14/2, 111/19, the evening star.
Hete, 18/29, heat.
Heved, 1/12, 84/14, head.
Hevenlyche, 3/33, heavenly.
Hevith, 130/6, heaveth.
Hevyere, 20/24, heavier.

Hevyeth, 133/5, to make heavy.
Heye, **Heygh**, 47/13, 92/13, 103/13, high.
Heyere, 111/9, higher.
Heyeste, **Heyista**, 2/22, 128/15, 113/6, highest.
Heyhte, 5/7, called.
Heyhte, 86/21, 111/12, height.
Heyoste, 47/14, highest.
Hiede, 24/8, pour.
Hihte, 25/31, called.
Hit, 121/22, it.
Holden, 46/22, held.
Holdestow, 21/8, holdest thou.
Holsom, 17/19, 35/11, wholesome.
Holy howses, 9/34, sanctuaries for refuge.
Holyly, 70/24, wholly, entirely.
Homer, the sweet-mouthed, 119/7.
Hond, 36/10, hand.
Hongyr, 56/1, hunger.
Honte, 64/9, hunt.
Honyede, 54/2, honied.
Hool, **Hoole**, 66/13, 69/31, whole.
Hoolnesse, 107/19, wholeness.
Hooly, 14/22, holy.
Hoomlich, 83/8, homely.
Hoope, 10/34, 19/16, hope.
Hoore, 1/11, hoary.
Hoote, 14/8, hot.
Hoot yren, 10/4, hot iron. [Dr. Morris's edition reads "hoke of iren" = "iron hook."]
Hors, 50/29, horse.
Hovyd, 137/26, behoved.
Howndes of the palyse, 9/17, the officers of the palace.
Hows, 52/26, house.
Humblesse, 63/4, humility.
Hungry tyme, 9/11, time of famine.
Hurtelith, **Hurtelyn**, 20/12, 130/16, to rush against, oppose.
Hust, 35/17, hushed.
Hy, 19/12, high.
Hyden, 64/7, set.
Hydere, 117/9, hider.
Hyen, 78/25, come together.
Hyene, 39/3, hyæna.
Hyere, 2/13, higher.
Hyhten, 5/10, 43/20, 115/1, called.
Hyhteth, 4/9, adorneth.
Hyr, 53/26, their.
Hyre, 1/19, her.
Hyre, 14/13, high.

Iben, 126/10, been.
Iblamyd, 3/16, to be blamed.
Ibowed, 107/6, bent, turned.
Ibowht, 84/25, bought.
Icawht, 74/5, caught, entangled.
Icoromped, 118/22, corrupt.
Icovered, 103/16, covered.
Idowted, 127/14, doubted.
Idra, 115/6, Hydra.
Ifelawshipped, 42/9, associated, united.
Iflyt, 4/2, flitted, removed.
Igetyn, 24/16, gotten.
Ihardyd, 103/24, hardened.
Ihevyd, 133/10, raised, heaved.
Ihydd, 96/3, hidden.
Ijoigned, 42/10, joined.
Ikountynued, 132/30, continued.
Ilad, 25/26, 134/20, led.
Ileten, 101/16, permitted.
Ilorn, 48/27, lost.
Imaked, 68/21, 134/24, made.
Imedled, 17/1, mingled.
Imperial, 3/20, august.
Imperisse, 85/24, empress.
Imperiye, 40/25, government.
Impetrent, 123/21, obtain. [See Dr. Morris's note on **Emprenten**.]
Implieth, 117/32, enfoldeth, incloseth.
Inconvenyent, 123/1, inconvenience.
Inde, 95/20, India.
Indus, 74/15, the river.
Infect, 103/14, infected.
Infinite, **Infynyte**, 105/12, 134/1, infinity, without end.
Infirm, 119/9, feeble.
Infortune, 62/19, 86/13, misfortune.
Inmoevablete, 134/28, immobility.
Innerest, **Inneryste**, 106/10, 107/26, innermost.
Inowgh, **Inowh**, 7/26, 36/11, enough.
Inparfyt, 69/23, imperfect.
Inpressed, 130/12, impressed.
In somme, 10/12, in the end.
Instaunce, 130/22, presence.
Insylte, **Inshyte**, 18/34, 124/7, insight.
Intersse, 40/9, interest.
Inwith, 21/21, within.
Iplited, 5/1, pleated, folded.
Iplownged, 111/19, plunged.

- 134/10, proved.
 yn, 56/29, 124/32, 127/18,
 sent.
 /17, 54/5, 102/15, shed,
 1.
 '26, shut.
 3/7, 70/2, shown.
 5/8, made clear, deter-
 27, issue.
 , issue.
 d, 136/14, strengthened.
 08/22, behaved.
 44/27, pressed, squeezed.
 16/3, touched.
 2/14, handled, performed.
 /19, 127/10, 28, known.
 d, 134/9, witnessed.
 e, 53/32, chattering.
 hi, 122/8, ridiculous.
 3/32, to join.
 '12, pleasure.
 /19, jaws.
 , 32/5, juncture, joining.
 Juppiter, 23/33, 37/27,
 Jove.
 12, a judge; 42/15, to
 t, 2/9, judgment.
 34/7, catch.
 5/13, Cacus.
 13, calm.
 23/28, captivity.
 26/28, carter, coachman.
 6/29, carts, carriages.
 '14, cut.
 :1, caves.
 /24, caught.
 19/1, caitiffs.
 4/24, 58/20, combed.
 27, sharp.
 '23, cut.
 12, helm.
 , 105/1, clearness.
 , 32/33, clothing.
 119/14, clouds.
 /1, cleft.
 3, 116/15, knitting.
 87/1, knowledge.
 inge, 130/23, knowledge.
 7, 4/23, knowest thou.
 Knowy, 131/32, knowledge.
 Knowynge, 18/5, 34/11, 48/25,
 knowledge.
 Knyt, 59/29, 86/32, knight, soldier.
 Kontek, 101/28, contest, strife.
 Korn, 50/24, corn.
 Korven, 2/26, 6/9, cut, rent, tear.
 Koude, 115/9, could.
 Kragges, 117/24, craga.
 Krept, 17/26, crept.
 Kunnyng, 10/8, knowledge.
 Kuttinge, 104/11, 114/20, cutting.
 Kyd, 37/16, known.
 Kynde (of), 34/12, naturally.
 Kyndeli, Kyndeliche, 79/15, 89/4,
 naturally.
 Kynredes, 28/25, 47/11, kindred,
 families.
 Kythen, 40/1, make known, show.
 Lache, 95/3, slow, lazy.
 Lad, 23/25, 126/19, led.
 Laddres, 2/24, ladders.
 Lafte, 48/23, left.
 Lakkit, 88/3, lacketh.
 Lambyssh, 37/20, lamblike.
 Languesse, 96/27, languish.
 Languysses, 20/1, languishest.
 Langwysynge, 101/19, languishing.
 Lappe, 4/33, flap.
 Largesse, 31/18, liberality.
 Lasse, 68/32, less.
 Last, 28/23, lasteth.
 Lat, 19/16, 54/8, let.
 Late, 103/11, last.
 Laued, 84/8, sang.
 Laus, Lavae, 30/32, 106/21, loose,
 free.
 Leche, 7/23, 89/25, physician, doc-
 tor.
 Leef, 25/14, dear.
 Leese, Leesyn, 29/29, 30/9, 55/27,
 110/2, lose.
 Leeseth, 14/2, loseth.
 Leest, 29/8, smallest.
 Leeste weye, 126/11, least way,
 least wise.
 Leesynge, 109/34, loss.
 Leesynge, Lesing, 10/28, 121/28,
 lies, falsehoods.
 Leeves, 14/10, leaves (of trees,
 etc.).
 Lemes, lymes, 95/27, 96/2, limbs.
 Lengere, 41/1, 75/32, longer.

- Leten, 5/26, to leave; 48/18, to esteem.
 Leve, 99/25, permission, leave.
 Leveful, 5/26, 10/27, 96/16, lawful, allowable.
 Leven, 99/19, believe.
 Lever, 4/24, more likely.
 Leveth, 24/23, liveth.
 Leveth, 108/9, alloweth, giveth.
 Levynge, 7/5, 34/12, living, daily life.
 Liggeth, 47/19, lieth.
 Liggynge, 114/25, lying.
 Litarge, 4/28, lethargy.
 Litestere, 36/17, a dyer.
 Lith, 129/30, lieth.
 Lith, 95/4, light.
 Lithly, 126/26, quickly, easily.
 Looketh, 21/16, looketh.
 Lokyn, 87/16, look.
 Lookynge, 4/18, 5/18, 74/17, 126/31, sight.
 Lorel, 13/21, a wretch.
 Lorn, 23/7, 34/33, lost.
 Lorshippe, 58/23, lordship, power.
 Loth, 27/29, loath.
 Lucifere, Lucyfer, 14/5, 50/28, 111/20, Lucifer, the morning star.
 Lukan, 108/17, Lucian.
 Luxures, 62/8, luxuries.
 Lybye, 115/13, Lybia.
 Lydyens, 23/23, the Lydians.
 Lye, 26/5, lay.
 Lyfly, 2/6, lifelike.
 Lyhte goodes, 1/17, temporal goods.
 Lyhtes, 14/2, lights.
 Lyhtneth, 99/23, onlighteneth.
 Lykerous, Lykorous, 37/27, 57/4, lecherous.
 Lykned, 10/5, 94/31, likened.
 Lykynges, 20/31, pleasures.
 Lymes, 55/33, limbs.
 Lynage, 28/25, lineage.
 Lyouns, 53/23, lions.
 Lyssheth, 22/11, laughs at.
 Lythly, 6/30, 35/4, easily.
 Lythnesse, 3/33, 77/11, light, brightness.
 Lytul, 17/15, little.
 Maad, 27/30, weary, dejected.
 Madyr, 36/17, a red dye.
 Magestrat, 57/1, magistracy.
 Maked, 2/14, 10/33, made.
 Maledye, 3/6, disease.
 Malefice, 12/33, sorcery.
 Malice, 12/31, wickedness.
 Manassinge, Manasyngge, 30/29, 92/14, threatening, menacing.
 Manesses, 7/8, 21/18, menaces.
 Marchus tullius, 45/2, 125/4, Marcus Tullius Cicero.
 Mareys, Marys, 44/21, 76/24, marsh.
 Margarettes, 74, note 4, pearls.
 Marmorike, 95/17, ? Marmarica, part of Libya, between Cyrene and Egypt.—*Lempriere*.
 Maryaage, 114/15, marriage.
 Maryes, 76/31, pith, marrow (*medulle*).
 Mast, 36/7, beech nuts.
 Mawgre, Mawgre, 55/18, 21, in spite of.
 Maysteresse, 10/17, mistress.
 Maystow, 18/9, 77/3, mayest thou.
 Maystrye, 8/19, masterhood.
 Meche, 24/15, 30/15, much.
 Mede, 72/2, meed, reward.
 Medleth, 19/7, 74/16, 95/13, mixeth.
 Medlynge, 12/17, mixing.
 Meedes, Meedis, 35/20, 90/6, rewards.
 Meene, 68/27, mean; 114/4, the mean, or middle path.
 Meenelyche, 19/2, moderate.
 Melle, 36/6, mill.
 Menbrys, 61/25, bodies.
 Meneden, 116/23, meant, intended.
 Menelaus, 114/16.
 Meracle, 104/5, miracle.
 Mercurie, 95/21, Mercury.
 Mermaydenes, 3/13, mermaids.
 Mervayles, 20/4, marvellous.
 Merveylen, 32/15, 83/23, to marvel.
 Merveylynge, 5/14, wondering.
 Mery, Merye, 31/2, 66/1, pleasant.
 Meryly, 46/10, pleasantly.
 Merynesse, 52/4, pleasure.
 Meschef, 27/20, mischief.
 Mesure, 2/11, stature.
 Mesuren, 51/27, to measure.
 Metes, 35/2, fruits of the earth; 53/24, meats, food.
 Meward, 1/19, towards me.
 Meyne, 33/1, 86/4, servants, domestics.
 Misericorde, 84/23, mercy, pity.

- Mo, 93/33, more.
 Moche, 13/5, many.
 Mochel, 38/11, 62/13, great.
 Mochel, 32/12, much.
 Moedes, 20/24, *L. modos*, measures, tunes, strains.
 Moene, 4/1, the Moon; 111/15, the clerk of the Moon.
 Moevable, 103/26, mobile, fickle.
 Moeven, Moevynge, 4/5, 62/7, 134/29, to move, moving.
 Moevynge, 101/26, motion.
 Mokeren, 31/17, hoarding up.
 Mokeres, 31/17, misers.
 Moleste, 66/19, trouble, grief.
 Monstre, 20/5, prodigy.
 Moore, 100/24, greater.
 Moost, 6/27, 29/6, chief, most.
 Moot, 27/31, 30/7, must.
 Morter, 36/15, mortar.
 Morwe, 14/4, morning.
 Mosten (*pl.*), 129/22, must.
 Mosthow, 75/21, must thou.
 Mot, 60/10, must.
 Mot, Moten, 28/11, 59/6, might.
 Mous, 41/10, mouse.
 Mowe, 19/3, 25/3, may.
 Mowen, 16/18, 19/5, be able.
 Mowht, 8/5, mouth.
 Mowinge, 92/1, moving, motion.
 Mowrnynge, 54/5, mourning.
 Mowynge, 97/1, ability, power.
 Moyste, 30/31, 111/24, moist, soft.
 Muable, 104/28, movable.
 Musculus, 131/9, mussels.
 Musuciens, 42/19, musicians.
 Musus, Mysus, 41/10, 11, mice.
 Musyce, 20/23, Music.
 Mutabylyte, 63/21, changeableness.
 Mutacyouns, 18/22, changes.
 Myhtestow, 6/19, thou mightest.
 Myntyng, 3/29, purposing, endeavouring.
 Mynystreth, 61/23, administers.
 Myrthes, 102/28, pleasures.
 Myrre, 113/9, pleasant.
 Mys, 102/20, badly, wrongly.
 Myseyces, 8/32, grievances, troubles.
 Mysknowynge, 48/13, 79/17, ignorant, ignorance.
 Mystorneth, 54/22, misturneth, misleadeth.
 Mys weyes, 79/2, 116/6, wrong paths.
 Nadris, 132/31, adders, snakes.
 Naked, 115/21, to make naked.
 Nameles, 102/11, unrenowned.
 Namelyche, 97/4, especially.
 Narice, 95/11, Narycia, or Naryx.
 Nart, 15/7, art not.
 Narwh, 44/26, narrow.
 Nas, 17/24, 36/9, was not.
 Nasyoun, 44/29, 57/26, nation.
 Nat, 1/13, 15/7, not.
 Natheles, Natles, 2/25, 21/6, 81/18, nevertheless.
 Naturely, Natureli, 14/22, 75/23, 118/13, naturally.
 Nayteth, 1/16, refuseth.
 Ne, 67/6, know.
 Necesseden, 68/14, necessitated.
 Nedly, 66/8, of necessity.
 Nedy, 22/27, in need.
 Negardye, 39/21, misers.
 Negh, 106/8, nigh.
 Nel, 80/16, will not.
 Nembrot, 37/29, Nimrod.
 Nere, 5/26, 17/17, were not.
 Nero, 43/7, 58/19, 59/27, the emperor.
 Nethereste, 2/20, 25, lowest, nethermost.
 Neweliche, 95/18, newly.
 Newith, 106/32, reneweth.
 Neygh, 103/8, nigh.
 Neysshebour, 25/14, 45/17, neighbour.
 Nhylt, 14/3, night.
 Nil, 84/21, will not.
 Nis, 6/29, 31/12, 122/17, is not.
 Nobely, 2/24, perfectly.
 Noblesse, 28/25, nobleness.
 Noblye, 23/30, nobility, nobleness.
 Node, 59/6, need.
 Nolde, 24/13, 29/15, 55/6, would not.
 Nolden nat, 9/33, would not.
 Nomyus, 56/25, Nonius, a Consul of Rome.
 None, 3/1, 77/8, no.
 Nonepower, 59/7, impotence.
 Nory, Norry, Norye, 5/23, 67/20, 78/27, nursling, pupil.
 Noryse, 5/18, nurse.
 Norysse, 61/29, nurse, nourish.
 Noryssed, 4/19, nourished.
 Norysshyng, Noryssynge, 32/25, 76/30, nourishment, support.

- Not, 17/20, 52/25, know not.
 Noteful, 3/15, useful.
 Nother, 124/29, neither.
 Nothus, 43/22, 50/27, the south wind
 Notus.
 Nower, 57/29, nowhere.
 Nowmbyr, 4/3, 68/22, number.
 Noysen, 61/27, to brag, boast, make
 a noise about.
 Nyce, 115/21, foolish.
 Nyht, 87/3, night.
 Nylynge, 76/11, 118/19, being un-
 willing.
 Nylt, 88/9, wilt not.
 Nystyst, 80/9, knew not.

 O, 31/23, a, one.
 Obeysaunt, 8/5, 21/33, obedient.
 Objecte, 130/24, presented.
 Occian, 111/18, ocean.
 Ocupye, 114/4, to seize.
 Offence, 36/19, hurt, damage.
 Offencion, 13/3, offence.
 Offense, 57/2, offending.
 Oftyme, 109/1, oft-times.
 Olyfaunt, 63/13, elephants.
 Onknowyn, 36/6, unknown.
 Onsufferabele, 20/7, unsufferable,
 intolerable.
 Oo, 15/14, 74/2, one.
 Oonis, 122/20, once.
 Oonly, 133/5, only.
 Oonyd, 105/16, united.
 Oores, 35/14, oars.
 Oost, 6/28, host, number.
 Oostesse, 95/23, hostess.
 Oother, 5/15, 34/2, other.
 Ootherweys, 128/5, otherwise.
 Opnen, 116/2, to open, show.
 Opylion, 9/30, one of Boethius's
 accusers.
 Or, 4/31, 62/16, 97/7, ere, before.
 Ordene, Ordenely, 80/25, 86/3,
 109/16, orderly.
 Ordenoure, 81/24, 86/4, ordainer.
 Ordinat, 7/4, ordered, settled.
 Ordure, 19/10, filth.
 Orphelyn, 25/12, orphaned.
 Orpheus, 83/28, the poet.
 Ostelmentus, 33/21, furniture, goods.
 Outrely, 23/2, utterly.
 Overcomere, 4/3, conqueror.
 Overmuchel, 62/13, over much, very
 much.
 Overold, 6/21, very old.
 Overthrowen, 13/23, prostrate.
 Overthrowynge, Overthrowenge,
 3/27, 47/3, 109/28, forward, head-
 strong.
 Overtymeliche, 1/11, untimely.
 Overwelneeth, 26/31, tosseth,
 rolleth.
 Owen, 70/19, ought.
 Ow, 17/18, 87/20, the exclamation
 "O!"
 Owhtest, 6/24, 48/18, ought.
 Owtereste, Owtterest, 43/16, 70/1,
 extremest, remotest.
 Owterly, Owtrely, 19/26, 47/19,
 85/9, 112/17, utterly.
 Owtrage, 33/24, 35/4, 36/5, excess.
 Owtrayen, 61/19, 'ultra viare,' go
 or diverge from?
 Owthorw, 7/10, out through.
 Oystrys, 131/9, oysters.

 Paale, 26/24, pale, vanishing away.
 Paas, 12/11, paces.
 Paied, 36/3, satisfied.
 Painted, 87/3, depicted.
 Palys, 15/22, pale; 17/27 (L. uclut
 hiant e ualli robore).
 Palyt, 26/22, paleth.
 Papynian, 59/29, Papinian.
 Parchemyn, 129/22, parchment.
 Parfit, Parfyt, 4/20, 28/20, 65/5,
 perfect.
 Parfytlyche, Parfytly, 68/20,
 104/10, perfectly.
 Parsoneres, 132/15, sharers, par-
 takers.
 Parthes, 45/5, the Parthians.
 Partles, 93/20, without a share.
 Party, 29/8, part.
 Paulyn, Pawlus, 9/16, 23/27, a Consul
 of Rome.
 Paysyble, 36/1, peaceable.
 Pees, 111/13, peace.
 Pene, 53/23, Phœnicia. L. pocni
 leones.
 Peraventure, 11/13, peradventure.
 Percen, 63/23, 96/7, to pierce.
 Percyens, 23/27, Persians.
 Perdurable, 2/16, 13/29, 27/3, im-
 perishable.
 Perdurablely, 77/7, 128/14, everlast-
 ing, imperishably.
 Perdurablete, 45/23, immortality.

- Performe, 52/29, afford, furnish.
 Perise, 44/3, perish.
 Periseth, 76/6, perisheth.
 Perles, 64/12, pearls.
 Perturba, 18/33, perturbation.
 Perturbacyon, Perturbasyoun, 3/25, 16/17, perturbation.
 Perverted, 6/15, destroyed.
 Pesyble, Peyseyble, 15/2, 69/9, quiet, placid.
 Peyne, 9/20, 12/1, 122/24, punishment.
 Peyntyd, 87/4, painted.
 Phebus, 5/13, 16/21, 86/31, Phœbus.
 Philosophy, as she appeared to Boethius, 2, *et seq.*; her discourse with Boethius, 5, *et seq.*
 Pictagoras, 12/24, Pythagoras.
 Pitowsly, 23/28, piteously.
 Pitty, 109/30, putteth.
 Plato, 5/32, 8/5, 68/3, 79/31, 80/1, 134/15.
 Playnynges, 22/19, complaining.
 Plente, 134/32, fullness.
 Plenteuously, 16/4, abundantly.
 Plentivos, 50/22, yielding abundantly, fertile.
 Plentyvous, Plentyvos, 3/4, 4/10, 52/29, plentiful, affluent.
 Pleten, 22/16, argue, plead.
 Pletynges, 55/22, pleadings, debates.
 Playesthow, 82/24, playest thou.
 Pleyne, 11/10, 21/1, complain.
 Pleynede, 84/4, complained.
 Pleynesthow, 23/2, complainest thou.
 Pleynly, Pleynlyche, 18/15, 46/4, plainly.
 Pleyntes, 86/15, complaints.
 Pleyyth, 21/3, playeth.
 Plownged, 3/18, 51/29, plunged.
 Plowngen, 64/18, plunge.
 Plowngy, 5/8, 50/28, wet, rainy.
 Poliphemus, 114/24, Polyphemus.
 Point, 12/18, polluted.
 Pool, 103/9, the North Pole.
 Porcionables, 68/22, proportionably.
 Porysmes, 71/34, axioms.
 Pose, 107/25, 126/1, to put a case.
 Postum, 56/25, imposthume.
 Powere, 53/2, power.
 Pownage, 36/7, pasturage.
 Powste, 102/15, power.
 Poyntel, 2/3, 129/25, style.
 Predestynat, 119/5, predestined.
 Prescience, 135/19: L. *praescientiam* or *praevidentiam*, some MSS.; tho' most read *praesentiam*.
 Presensse, 134/35, presence.
 Presentarye, 134/26, present.
 Presyous, Presios, 25/15, 56/13, precious.
 Preterit, 133/24, preterite, past; *pl.* 'preterites,' 135/16.
 Pretorie, 9/14, the imperial body-guard.
 Prevey, 94/32, secret.
 Preyeden, 83/12, prayed to.
 Preyedest, 16/11, didst pray.
 Preyere, 84/12, prayer.
 Preyses, 21/9, precious.
 Preysynge, 60/26, praising.
 Prikke, 44/13, point.
 Pris, 25/24, price.
 Prisen, 10/29, estimate, judge.
 Probasyons, 20/24, tunes: Addit. MS. 10,340 'prolasyons'; '*Prolation*: f. a pronouncing, utterance, delivrie of words.'—*Cotgrave*. The Latin is '*nunc leuiiores nunc grauiiores modos succinat*.'
 Procede 2/13 [*? percede, pierced*].
 Processes, 70/18.
 Proeve, 120/3, approve.
 Proeved, 69/23, proved.
 Proeven, 70/24, to prove.
 Pronostik, 39/22, prognostic.
 Proposiciouns (Euclid's), 71/33.
 Prospere, 8/25, proper.
 Provostrye, 58/4, provostship.
 Prykke, 78/29, point.
 Prykketh, 66/20, pricketh.
 Prys, 44/11, 99/29, praise.
 Prys, 123/14, price, value; "worthli of prys," 15/29, precious.
 Prysoun, 102/17, prison.
 Pryve, 26/4, 54/11, private, privy, secret.
 Publyssed, Pupllisen, 45/17, 77/4, to publish, spread, propagate.
 Punyshe, 14/19, to punish.
 Purposede, 137/22, proposed.
 Purple, Purpure, 16/26, 92/13, purple.
 Purpres, 58/20, purple clothes.
 Purpyr, 35/11, the Tyrian purple dye.

- Purveyable, 53/21, provident, foreseeing.
 Purveyed, Purvyed, 13/7, 120/12, ordained, foreseen.
 Purvyance, Purvyance, 78/5, 104/17, 105/2, 135/23, providence.
 Putte, 85/2, pit.
 Pymment, 35/7, a kind of drink.
 Quereles, 55/22, complaints.
 Quayk, Qwyke, 104/15, 130/13, living.
 Quyene, 39/11, queen.
 Quyerne, 36/6, a mill.
 Qwit, 127/7, quit.
 Rafte, 114/32, bereft.
 Rather, 20/1, earlier, former.
 Ravaynour, Ravynere, 7/2, 94/29, plunderer.
 Ravenne, 10/2, the city of Ravenna.
 Ravesynge, 14/32, ravishing, carrying off.
 Ravyne, Raveyne, 9/1, 24/17, plunder, rapine.
 Ravyssse, 6/6, to snatch.
 Ravyssed, 6/29, misled.
 Ravysshenn, 102/22, to carry off.
 Real, 10/16, royal.
 Realte, 39/28, royalty.
 Reaunes, 59/2, realms.
 Rechcheth, 64/17, careth, recketh.
 Recisted, 8/24, resisted.
 Recke, 26/18, to care, reck.
 Recompensacyon, 101/11, recompense.
 Recordedde, 2/1, recounted.
 Recordedyst, 72/23, didst recall.
 Recordeth, 79/32, recalls.
 Recourses, 4/2, courses.
 Reddowre, 38/13, severity, rigour.
 Rede, 3/33, red (colour).
 Rede see, 56/13, the Red Sea.
 Rednesse, 3/17, flushing.
 Redowtable, 102/12, venerable.
 Redowte, 5/28, to fear.
 Redowted, 45/5, 57/27, feared, venerated.
 Reducen, 63/32, reduce.
 Redyly, 54/7, readily, easily.
 Refect, 111/8, refreshed.
 Referred, 78/23, reduced.
 Refowsestow, 14/16, refusest thou.
 Reft away, 14/11, carried off.
 Refut, 74/9, refuge.
 Regnes, 53/12, 58/29, kingdoms.
 Regulus, 42/1.
 Rekenynge, 26/5, reckoning.
 Rekkeþ, 22/10, recketh.
 Remenbresthow, 18/7, rememberest thou.
 Remordith, 109/5, vexeth, troubleth.
 Remuable, 131/11, able to remove from one place to another.
 Remwed, 7/17, 12/10, removed.
 Remwen, 41/21, to remove.
 Rendynge, 1/3, tearing, torn, renting. L. lacerare camenae.
 Renne, 76/3, run.
 Rennyngge, 35/12, running.
 Renomed, 53/7, 56/30, renowned.
 Renon, 6/21, renown.
 Renovelen, 77/4, renew.
 Repeyrede, 5/4, repaired, came again.
 Repeyreth, 53/28, cometh back.
 Replenysshed, 12/34, replenished.
 Replycasion, 82/28, replication.
 Reproeveth, 130/8, reproveth.
 Repugnenn, 119/21, to be repugnant to.
 Reputasyn, 29/12, reputation.
 Requerable, 41/8, desirable.
 Requered, 73/13, required.
 Requereþ, 77/34, requires.
 Rescowe, 103/20, to recover.
 Rescowede, 23/26, rescued.
 Resolved, 103/24, melted.
 Resownynge, 84/7, resounding.
 Restingwhiles, 8/17, resting-places.
 Restraine, 14/32, restrain.
 Rethorice, 20/22, Rhetoric.
 Rethoryen, 20/21, rhetorical.
 Retretith, 124/31, considereth.
 Reven, 39/18, 50, rob.
 Reverenc, 58/24, reverend.
 Rewlyche, 23/24, pitiable, sorrowful.
 Reygnen, 19/19, reign.
 Reyjoyseth, 15/15, rejoiceth.
 Reyn, 23/12, 111/30, rain.
 Reynes, 60/12, reins.
 Reynoun, 53/5, renown.
 Rihtwessnesse, 123/14, righteousness.
 Rith, 86/3, right.
 Roche, 19/13, 76/25, rock.
 Rody, 26/26, red, ruddy, blooming.

- 40/29; certain citizens of,
21, 23; the burning of,
64/9, roes.
53/28, roar.
4/9, 26/21, roseate, ruddy.
26/26, rose-coloured.
33/1, company.
1, 19/11, runneth, rolleth.
9/25, royal.
ses, 6/32, riches, goods, pos-
sions.
snesse, Ryhtwysnesse, 9/25,
righteousness, equity.

6/33, satchels, sacks.
6, 70/4, stable.
e, 86/15, stability.
ce, 27/23, wisdom.
ris, 6/33, sacks made of
e cloth.
s, 86/32, Saturn.
n, 8/23, 76/14, safety, salva-

36/16, sauce.
ye, 2/30, 25/26, 57/4, saw.
95/10, ships.
nge, 99/26, escaping.
eth, 66/22, scattereth.
s, 7/2, scorn.
115/16, foam, froth.
h, 43/23, scorcheth, burneth.
thow, 82/23, scornest thou.
re, 10/32, writing.
17, secret.
4/12, seeds (of corn).
2/20, seat.
17/19, search.
103/27, seldom.
13, very.
ble, 33/31, 61/21, 66/28,
like, the same.
unce, 110/33, likeness.
unt, 2/4, appearance, counte-
s.
25/27, assembly.
16, see.
59/27, Seneca; Senecciens,

y, 67/5, singly.
litees, 129/18, sensations.
ses, 13/14, sentences.
rye, 10/1, sanctuary.

Septemtyryones, 43/20, the seven
stars near the North Pole, the
Wain, or Great and Little Bear.
Serjauntz, 59/20, servants, armed
men.
Servage, 118/28, servitude.
Seryens, 35/8, Syria.
Sestow, Sesthow, Seysthow, 38/27,
45/6, 56/27, 112/16, seest thou.
Sete, 7/29, seat.
Seyen, Seyh, Seyht, Seyng, 11/26,
12/14, 27/13, 116/14, say.
Seyn, Seyt, 2/23, 69/12, 134/12,
seen.
Shad, 1/11, 106/18, divided, spread.
Shad, 62/22, shed, got rid of.
Shadwe, 26/12, shadow.
Shadwey, 57/24, shadowy.
Shaltow, 7/14, 67/9, shalt thou.
Shapith, 13/21, exerteth.
Shellen, 10/31, shall.
Sholden, 4/22, should.
Sholdesthow, Sholdysthow, 33/9,
39/28, shouldest thou.
Shollen, 50/32, shall.
Shrewede, 11/11, wicked.
Shrewednesse, 11/13, 91/15, wicked-
ness.
Shrewes, 6/28, 42/8, wicked persons,
wretches.
Shronk, 2/10, shrunk.
Shuldres, 115/16, shoulders.
Shullen (*pl.*), 16/15, shall.
Shyllefyssh, 35/10, shellfish.
Sikerly, 74/3, certainly.
Sikernessee, 4/22, 9/34, security,
safety.
Sittinge, 5/26, fitting, becoming.
Skars, 37/6, scarce.
Skatere, 69/7, scatter.
Skyles, 120/32, skills.
Skylynge, 106/25, reason.
Slaked, 49/6, 118/3, slackened.
Slaken, 53/29, slacken.
Slakke, 53/19, slackening (of
stringed instruments).
Slakyn, 35/4, to slake (hunger).
Slawhtre, 11/28, slaughter.
Sledys, 86/23, sledges.
Slen, 41/34, 43/11, slay.
Slepin, 35/11, slept.
Slepys, 35/11, sleeps.
Slow, Slowh, Slowgh, 43/9, 104/13,
115/6, slew.

- Slowen, 59/29, slay.
 Slydith, 110/24, slideth.
 Slydyng, 14/18, changing.
 Smale, 46/8, small, of no avail.
 Smaragdes, 74, note 3, emeralds.
 Smerteth, 27/9, smarteth, paineth.
 Smokede, 2/19, besmoked.
 Smot, 114/27, smote.
 Smothe, 4/5, smooth, quiet.
 Smylyng, 104/6, smiling.
 Snakis, 132/31, snakes.
 Socrates, 6/1, 10/27, 38/17.
 Sodeyn, 20/15, 97/6, sudden.
 Solutarye, 69/33, solitary.
 Somdel, 16/16, 134/33, somewhat.
 Somer, 14/8, 63/21, summer.
 Somme, 29/6, 63/32, sun, measure, total.
 Son, 53/19, sound.
 Sondes, 76/25, sands.
 Songyn, 85/6, sung.
 Sonnere, 97/2, sooner.
 Sonwh, 103/23, snow.
 Soonges, 84/6, songs.
 Sopose, 108/22, suppose.
 Sorans, 6/20, sorrows.
 Sormounteh, 64/19, surpasseth.
 Sormounten, 63/12, exceed.
 Soruf, 15/4, sorrowful.
 Sorwe, Soruwe, 62/4, *et passim*, sorrow.
 Sorwistow, 18/17, sorrowest thou.
 Sorye, 26/11, sorry, grievous.
 Soth, Sothfast, 11/31, 48/7, 71/30, true.
 Soth, Sothe, 10/28, 79/1, truth.
 Sothere, 67/6, truer.
 Sothfastly, 70/6, truly.
 Sothfastnesse, 78/28, truthfulness.
 Sothnesse, 17/14, truthfulness.
 Sovereynly, 71/27, supremely.
 Soveryn, 28/3, supreme.
 Sowest, 69/1, followest.
 Sowhte, 36/30, sought.
 Sowne, 25/4, to sound.
 Sownynge, 4/5, sounding, roaring.
 Sowre, 9/11, sore, grievous.
 Sparkle, 82/17, spark.
 Spece, 128/10, species.
 Speculacion, 118/25, looking, contemplation.
 Speden, 125/17, to make clear, explain.
 Spedful, 97/21, 125/20, efficacious, conducive.
 Spedyn, 118/23, to expedite.
 Speeres, 4/2, spheres.
 Spillestow, 7/22, spillest thou.
 Splaces, 80/26, spaces.
 Sprad, 4/9, 25/33, spread.
 Spraynged, 29/17, sprinkled, mixed.
 Stable, 4/6, firm, fixed.
 Stablely, 105/25, firmly.
 Stablenesse, Stabylnesse, 18/5, 20/29, stability.
 Stablete, 107/7, stability.
 Stablyssyth, 104/32, to establish.
 Stadie, 93/1, a land measure.
 Stanchd, 23/15, satisfied.
 Stant, 5/8, 88/5, stands.
 Stenteth, 31/21, stinteth.
 Steppis, 133/1, steps.
 Sterre, 4/1, 24/12, 26/21, star.
 Sterry, 24/12, starry.
 Sterten, 81/17, to start.
 Stidefast, Stydefast, 1/22, 23/16, 38/17, 70/5, steadfast.
 Stidefastnesse, 76/34, stability, strength.
 Stiere, 81/12, rudder.
 Stierne, 47/15, stern.
 Stille, 47/19, quiet.
 Stintynge, 47/24, stopping, ceasing.
 Stokkes, 117/31, stocks of trees: L. trunci.
 Stoon, 31/2, stone.
 Stowndes, 16/33, 22/4, 111/25, 138/16, times.
 Stoycyens, 6/5, 129/17, the Stoics.
 Strawght, 132/29, stretched, extended.
 Strein, 19/11, stream.
 Strengere, 6/31, 20/20, 63/13, stronger.
 Strenges, 53/19, 84/7, strings (stringed instruments).
 Strepy, 92/12, strip off.
 Streyhte, 49/16, stretched.
 Streyne, 136/21, constrain.
 Streyte, 47/6, 51/2, narrow.
 Strokk, 119/14, stroke.
 Strompetes, 2/33, strumpets.
 Strondes, 35/15, 64/14, strands.
 Strook, 138/22, stroke.
 Stryf, 9/13, 22/20, strive.
 Stryne, 16/29, strain, press.

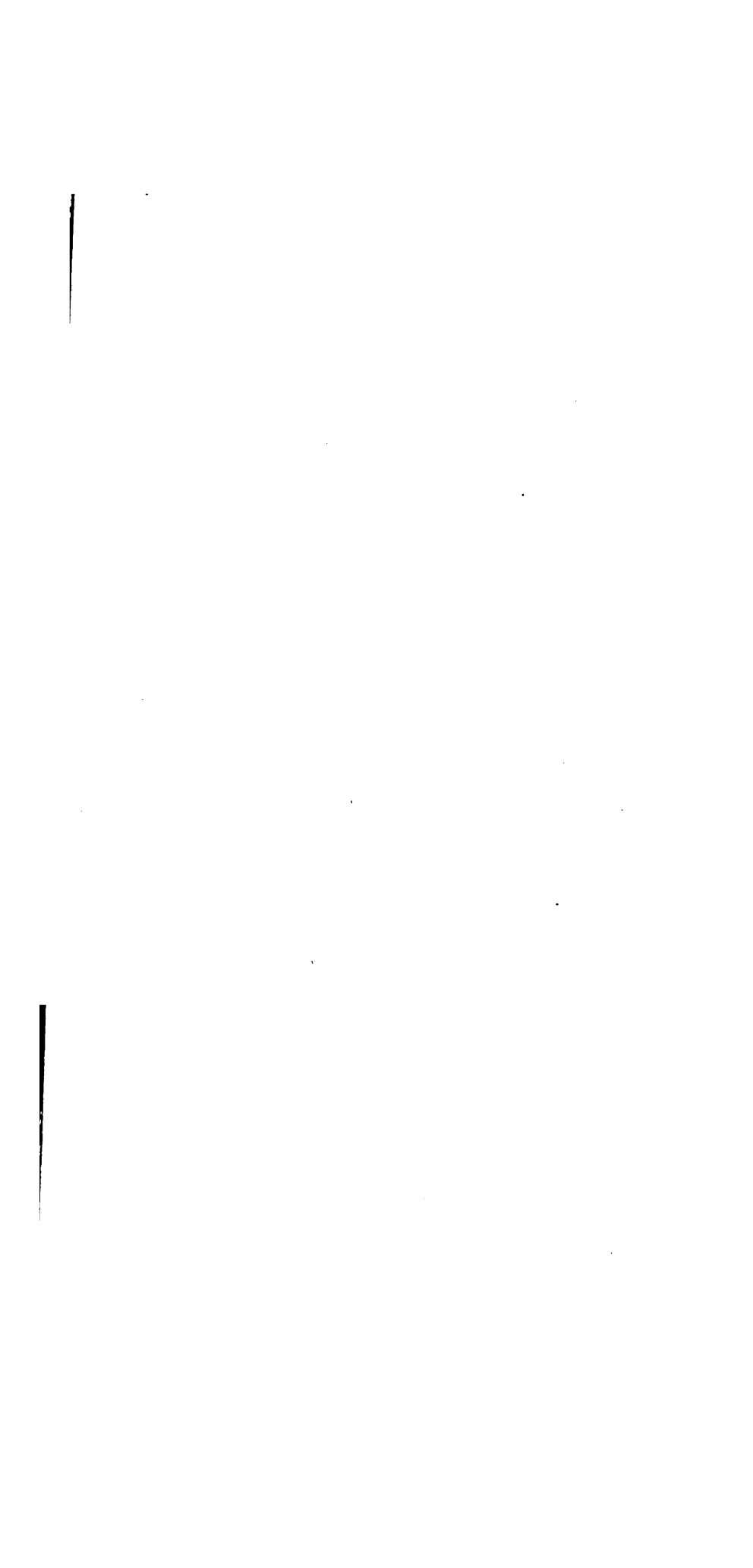
- Studieden, 8/9, studied.
 Styde, 116/10, stead.
 Styce, 69/4, 111/9, to ascend.
 Style, 35/17, quiet.
 Stynte, 19/20, stopped.
 Stynten, 25/4, to stop.
 Styntyth, 94/17, stoppeth, ceaseth.
 Styred, 83/20, moved.
 Suacyon, 20/21, persuasion.
 Subgit, 63/5, subjects, inferiors.
 Subgyt, Subgyd, 33/26, 53/8, subject.
 Submitted, 12/5, compelled, forced.
 Suffisaunce, Suffysaunce, 38/15, 55/29, sufficiency.
 Suffisaunt, Suffysaunte, 55/12, 15, sufficient.
 Suffisauntly, 104/9, sufficiently.
 Suffiseth, 56/6, suffices.
 Suffreden, 9/2, suffered.
 Suffrea, 14/17, sufferest.
 Sum, 28/24, some.
 Summytted, 69/21, 106/20, submitted.
 Sun, the, 4/1.
 Superfyte, 63/21, surface.
 Supplen, 63/2, supplicate.
 Surte, 36/17, security.
 Sustigne, 39/9, sustain.
 Swerdes, 59/29, swords.
 Swete, 1/14, sweet.
 Swetenesse, 20/21, sweetly.
 Swety, 36/28, sweaty.
 Sweyh, 13/30, whirl (circular motion).
 Swey3, 22/1, whirlings.
 Swich, Swiche, Swych, Swliche, 2/6, 27, 33, 3/9, 73/4, such.
 Swife, 86/24, swift.
 Swolwe, 77/24, swallow.
 Swote, 111/28, sweet.
 Swyfly, 27/8, 63/19, swiftly.
 Syk, Syke, 17/18, 101/2, sick.
 Sykenesse, 62/3, disease.
 Symacus, 27/22, Boethius's wife's father.
 Symplesse, 106/11, simplicity.
 Syn, 17/19, 21/22, since.
 Syngler, 44/34, individual, single.
 Syngler, 25/22, singular.
 Syngulerly, 105/25, singly.
 Sykyr, 6/34, secure, safe.
 Syrys, 14/14, the star Sirius.
 Sysile, 59/11, Sicily.
 Tabernacle of this lyf, 26/12.
 Tagus, 74/13, the river.
 Takestow, 17/22, takest thou.
 Talent, 3/3, 20/1, 131/2, affection.
 Tatalus, 84/19, Tantalus.
 Tawhtest, 112/25, taughtest.
 Taylage, 37/24, tollage.
 Tempest, 28/17, troublest.
 Temprede, 84/6, attempered.
 Thanne, 5/10, then.
 Thar, 76/20, need.
 Thechinges, 12/34, teachings.
 Thedyr, 21/28, thither.
 Thei, 14/32, these.
 Theodoric, Theodoryke, 9/3, 57/2, king of the Goths.
 Therwhiles, 137/24, whilst.
 Thewes, 94/7, ways, habits; glost 'conditions.'
 Thikke, 89/28, these.
 Thilke, 1/13, 7/15, 78/20, the same, that.
 Thise, 14/32, these.
 Tho, 3/2, 6/10, 131/2, the.
 Tho, 3/22, 26/1, then.
 Thogth, 105/21, thought.
 Tholome, Ptolemy, 44/18.
 Thonderere, 111/11, thunderer, i. e. God.
 Thonderlyht, 7/11, lightning.
 Thondre, 31/3, thunder.
 Thonk, 60/26, thanks.
 Thornesse, 26/29, thorns, hawthorns in flower.
 Thorw, 6/15, through.
 Thowchinge, 10/33, touching.
 Thowht, Thowt, 3/26, 27, thought.
 Thrace, 5/11, the country of.
 Thral, 60/15, enthralled.
 Thresshold, 3/18, threshold.
 Thresten, 32/30, thrust.
 Thriste, Thryst, 99/32, 115/17, thrust.
 Throf, 58/21, throve, flourished.
 Thurst, 24/21, 55/32, 84/19, thirst.
 Thykke, 22/24, these.
 Thynne, 47/16, slender.
 Ticius, 84/21, Tityus.
 Tigris, 117/23, the river.
 To, 64/9, the.
 To-breke, 69/7, break in pieces.
 Todrowen, 6/8, drew asunder.
 To-forn, 130/27, before.
 Togidre, 42/9, together.

- To hepe, 109/4, together.
 Tokneth, 16/32, tokeneth.
 Tollen, 44/7, to draw.
 To-morwe, 133/27, to-morrow.
 Tonge, 44/29, speech.
 Tonnes, 23/34, vessels.
 Torenten, 6/9, 123/28, rent asunder.
 Tormentus, 6/19, torments.
 Tornest, 13/29, turns.
 To-torn, 53/30, torn in pieces.
 Tow, 14/28, thou.
 Towched, 23/34, for Cowched, laid, set. L. jacere.
 Towchede, Towchid, 2/11, 108/31, touched.
 Towmblynge, 27/1, 30/4, 67/22, changing, changeable, tumbling.
 Traas, 132/30, trace, track.
 Trace, 83/28, Thracia.
 Tragedyen, 60/19, tragedian.
 Transpor, 11/28, transport, throw on.
 Travayle, Travaylen, 5/23, 20/11, 40/8, labour, toil.
 Travayleden, 120/15, laboured.
 Travayleth, Travayliith, 76/14, 124/14, laboreth.
 Trecheryes, 9/32, treacheries.
 Treden, 14/21, tread.
 Trenden, 79/3, roll, turn.
 Trespace, 28/32, wrong-doing.
 Trowblable, 92/18, troublesome.
 Trowble, 19/6, turbid, stormy.
 Trowbly, 103/28, troubled, cloudy.
 Trowe, Trowen, 2/8, 10/26, 17/10, 27/2, throw, know.
 Trowesthow, Trowestow, 5/29, 26/12, 29/7, 67/22, trowest thou.
 Troy, 114/14, the destruction of.
 Trwblynges, 92/19, troubles.
 Trybulasyons, 16/12, tribulations.
 Trygwille, 8/27, 'Triggvilla, regiae praepositus domus.
 Tumolte, 6/34, tumult.
 Turmenten, 9/12, torment.
 Twiterith, 54/6, twitter.
 Twyncled, 26/5, winked.
 Tydeth, 34/8, betides.
 Tygre, 63/14, tiger.
 Tyle, 60/15, Thule.
 Tylyere, 117/8, tiller.
 Tylyinge, 117/4, tilling.
 Tyneo, Plato's, 68/4.
 Tyren, 84/22, to tear.
 Tyrene, 64/10, Tyrrhene.
 Tyresye, 122/8, Tiresias.
 Tyrye, 35/8, 58/21, Tyre.
 Tyryones, vii, 43/20, Septemtriones, the seven stars near the North Pole, called also the Wain and the Great and Little Bear.
 Ulixes, 94/10, 114/23, Ulysses.
 Umble, 22/9, humble.
 Umblesse, 37/25, humility.
 Unagreable, 1/20, unpleasant, disagreeable.
 Unassaied, 28/34, untried.
 Unbityde, Unbytyde, 125/26, 136/19, not to happen.
 Unbowed, 115/18, unbent.
 Uncovenable, 109/28, unmeet, importunate.
 Undefowled, 27/19, undefiled.
 Undepartable, 93/21, inseparable.
 Undescounfited, 7/7, not discomfited.
 Undigne, 42/28, unworthy.
 Undowntous, 116/12, indubitable.
 Undyrnethe, 59/9, underneath.
 Undyrputte, 18/27, put under, subject.
 Undyrstondyn, 19/25, 29/32, to understand.
 Uneschuable, Uneschwably, 117/19, 121/31, unavoidable, unavoidably.
 Ungentel, 28/25, ignoble.
 Ungrobbed, 36/14, ungrubbed.
 Unhoped, 108/20, unexpected.
 Universels, 128/19, universal.
 Universite, 128/12, whole.
 Unjoyful, 32/31, bring no pleasure.
 Unjoynen, 117/27, to separate.
 Unknowable, 47/19, unknown.
 Unknowe, 103/3, unknown.
 Unknowynge, 108/12, ignorant.
 Unknyttten, 120/6, unloose.
 Unkorven, 36/14, uncut.
 Unkowth, 20/26, unknown, foreign.
 Unkunynge, 3/7, 6/15, 124/21, unknowing, ignorant.
 Unlaced, 82/26, disentangled.
 Unleceful, Unlefful, 20/31, 120/3, illicit, unlawful.
 Unlyk, 107/30, unlikely.
 Unmeke, 115/4, fierce, cruel.
 Unmoevable, 134/26, immovable.
 Unmoevablete, 106/17, immobility.

- Unmyhty, 7/15, weak, impotent.
 Unnethe, 17/23, scarcely.
 Unparfyt, 65/6, imperfect.
 Unparygal, 49/21, unequal.
 Unpietous, 1/19, cruel.
 Unpleyten, 48/3, explain.
 Unpleyteth, 129/28, explaineth, unfoldeth.
 Unplitable, 9/12 (*inexplicabilis*).
 Unprofitable man, 3/8, a common man, without education.
 Unpunyessed, 8/31, unpunished.
 Unpurveyed, 20/7, unforeseen.
 Unraced, 86/8, unbroken, whole.
 Unryhtful, 6/1, unjust.
 Unryhtfully, 14/21, unrightfully, unjustly.
 Unscience, 121/20, unreal knowledge, no knowledge.
 Unsely, 96/23, wretched.
 Unselynesse, 96/30, wretchedness.
 Unskylfully, 11/18, unwisely, improperly.
 Unsolempne, 6/21, not famous, not celebrated.
 Unsowe, 36/10, unsown.
 Unspedful, 139/5, unsuccessful.
 Unstaunchable, 46/3, unlimited, infinite.
 Unstaunched, 42/24, uncurbed, unrestrained.
 Unsufferable, 62/4, intolerable.
 Untretable, 47/27, inexorable, implacable.
 Unusage, 44/33, unfrequency.
 Unwar, 23/30, 117/7, unexpected.
 Unwarly, 1/9, unaware, unexpectedly.
 Unwemmed, Unwemmyd, 27/19, 138/31, inviolate.
 Unwenydy, 108/20, unexpected.
 Unworshipful, 58/24, dishonoured.
 Unwot, 136/15, knows not.
 Unzely, 27/10, wretched.
 Uphepyng, 25/22, heaping up.
 Uppereste, 2/25, highest.
 Up so down, 121/8, upside down.
 Upsprong, 36/10, upsprung.
 Ursa, 111/17, the Polar star.
 Usage, 3/5, use, subjection, bondage.
 L. assuefacient.
 Usaunce, 58/12, usage.
 Used, 11/2, 14/4, usual, accustomed.
- Uttereste, 3/23, 77/1, extremest, outermost.
 Vanesshen, 58/2, vanishing.
 Varyauntus, 14/9, varying.
 Vel, 44/22, well.
 Vengerisses, 84/15, she-avengers.
 Venyaunce, 97/31, vengeance.
 Venym, 115/7, venom.
 Venym, 35/8, the celebrated Tyrian dye is here meant.
 Verone, 11/27, Verona.
 Verray, 1/5, 18/34, true.
 Verraylyche, 73/21, verily.
 Vesevus, 7/10, the mountain Vesuvius.
 Visyous, 42/25, vicious.
 Voidede, 10/2, departed.
 Voltor, 84/20, vulture.
 Voyde, 34/29, 44/11, having an empty purse.
 Voyded of, 37/20, emptied of, free from.
 Vyl, 66/16, 86/5, vile.
 Vysyos, 58/27, vicious.
 Vytayles, 58/7, victuals, food.
 Waar, 30/26, wary.
 Wakyng, 115/2, watchful.
 Walvyng, 19/7, tossing.
 Walweth, 40/23, tosseth.
 Wan, 114/16, did win.
 Wan, 16/25, when.
 War, 97/7, 113/15, be aware, take care.
 Ware, 36/22, merchandize.
 Warnestored, 7/1, securely housed.
 Wawes, 4/8, 9/8, waves.
 Waxen, 14/13, swollen, increased in size.
 Wayk, 19/1, weak.
 Wayn, 87/11, cart.
 Weche, 14/25, which.
 Weened, 112/29, believed.
 Weenyng, 134/19, opinion.
 Weep (*pret.*), 23/28, wept.
 Weerey, 111/6, weary.
 Welde, 36/17, *qq.* wild, or boiled.
 Weleful, 1/8, 18/20, prosperous, joyful.
 Welefulnesse, 6/4, prosperity, felicity.
 Welkne, 39/30, welkin.
 Welle, 84/8, 112/3, well, source.

- Wellen, 114/1, to wither, fade.
 Welneeth, 26/31, tosseth, rolleth.
 Welneyh, 52/35, well-nigh.
 Wende, 41/24, weened, thought.
 Wendeth, 46/32, goeth.
 Wene, 3/9, think to. L. *putarem*.
 Wene, 104/25 [for Weue, L. *con-
tezo*, weave, make, speak].
 Wenen, 56/9, think.
 Wenestow, Weenesthow, 17/8, 18/
21, knowest thou.
 Wenith, 47/14, thinketh.
 Wenyngge, 6/11, thinking.
 Wepistow, 7/21, weepeth thou.
 Weply, Weply, 2/2, 83/30, tearful.
 Were as, 19/19, whereas.
 Werned, 25/21, refused, denied.
 Werrye, 36/25, to make war.
 Westrene, 111/17, western.
 Wete, 1/5, 5/8, wet.
 Weten, Wety, Witen, Wyten, 69/
16, 102/23, 121/23, 124/15, to
know, learn.
 Weve, 104/25, weave, make, tell.
 Wex, 129/26, wax.
 Wexen, 16/18, to increase, wax,
grow.
 Wexeth, Wexit, 3/30, 7/27, 18/33,
waxeth, increaseth.
 Weyes, 44/32, roads.
 Weyhte, Weyhty, 25/23, 63/13,
weight.
 Weyther, 120/16, whether.
 Weyues, 103/11, waves.
 Weyve, 19/15, waive, forsake.
 Wham, 70/5, whom.
 Whas, 10/11, was.
 Whel, 13/28, wheel.
 Whennes, 4/5, 11/18, whence.
 Whilom, 3/31, aforetime.
 Whise, 8/11, 10/30, wise.
 Whyder, Whyderward, 50/10, 138/8,
whither.
 Whyten, 72/16, to learn.
 Wierdes, 1/9, 7/6, fates, destinies.
 Wiht, 21/11, wight, a man.
 Wikke, 39/15, 88/30, wicked, bad.
 Wilne, 10/19, to desire.
 Wilnynges, 77/27, desires.
 Wist, Wyt, 11/9, known.
 Wit, 128/4, sense.
 Withdrowh, 51/1, withdrew.
 Withholden, 21/34, withstand.
 With-inne forth, 130/30, inwardly.
 Withowteforth, 128/6, outwardly.
 Withseid, Withseyde, 70/23, 116/
23, denied.
 Withstonde, Withston, 71/19, 139/5,
withstand.
 Withstonde, 8/24, withstood.
 Wityngge, 121/28, knowledge.
 Wod, 36/17, woad.
 Wode, 26/26, wood.
 Wold, 10/18, willed.
 Wolen (*pl.*), 74/12, will.
 Woltow, 17/4, 76/29, wilt thou.
 Wondyr, 27/8, wondrously.
 Wonen, 47/14, dwell.
 Woode, Wood, 6/34, 7/27, 16/10,
41/28, furious, mad, angry, raging.
 Wooden, 96/8, to rage.
 Woodeth, 96/15, rageth.
 Woodness, 31/5, 43/25, 84/19, rage,
madness.
 Woost, Wost, 11/31, 17/30, 136/31,
knowest.
 Woot, Wot, 17/31, 62/7, know.
 Wopen, 16/7, weeped.
 Wordly, Wordely, 3/31, 63/32,
worldly.
 Wordyl, 80/10, world.
 Workyn, 139/9, to work.
 Worth up, 23/20, ascend.
 Woxen, 16/16, 84/16, grown, waxed.
 Wrastlen, 90/24, wrestle.
 Wrekere, 114/12, avenger.
 Wrekynge, 114/14, vengeance.
 Writith, 7/10, worketh.
 Wrothly, 3/16, grieved, sad.
 Wryteres, 45/20, authors.
 Wrythen, 119/31, twist, turn, wrest.
 Wyckyd, 50/26, unpalatable.
 Wyht, 11/33, wight, person.
 Wyhte, 30/33, weight.
 Wyle, 104/25, while.
 Wyllynge, 118/19, 138/33, desire.
 Wymmen, 27/27, women.
 Wymplith, 20/33, veileth.
 Wyngis, 132/32, wings.
 Wypen, 4/32, wipe.
 Wyrkyngge, 75/10, 76/18, working,
operation.
 Wystesthow, 18/11, wistest thou.
 Wytnessefully, 102/14, attestedly,
publicly.
 Yaf, 4/21, 58/24, gave.
 Yald, 114/26, yielded.

- Yave, 25/34, 36/4, gave.
 Yben, 135/4, been.
 Ybownde, 74/6, bound.
 Ycharyd, 56/12, loaded.
 Yclepyd, 1/14, 105/1, called.
 Ydel, 'in ydel', 2/14, 32/1, 88/5, 122/23, in vain.
 Ydel, 47/16, empty.
 Ydon, 86/21, done.
 Ydrad, 22/8, feared.
 Ydre, 104/12, Hydra.
 Ydymmyd, 26/21, dimmed, becoming less conspicuous: said of the morning star waning through the rays of the rising sun.
 Yerde, 54/6, branch, sapling.
 Yeten, 19/5, get.
 Yeven, 63/2, 109/14, to give, bestow.
 Yevith, 115/24, giveth.
 Yevynge, 31/22, giving.
 Yfalle, 118/28, fallen.
 Yfastned, 13/29, fastened.
 Yfeched, 106/7, fixed.
 Yfownde, 124/22, founded.
 Ygerdonyd, 122/29, rewarded.
 Ygeten, 51/22, gotten.
 Yif, 4/21, if.
 Yiftes, 13/25, gifts.
 Yilden, 84/13, to give; 116/1, to yield.
 Yildeth, 111/28, yieldeth.
 Yisterday, 133/28, yesterday.
 Ykawht, 92/20, caught, captured.
 Yknowe, 124/15, known.
 Yknyt, 104/25, knit.
 Yled, 123/3, led.
 Yleft, 8/12, left.
 Ylett, 125/23, hindered.
 Yloost, 20/10, lost.
 Ylorn, 114/24, lost.
 Ymaginable, 129/1, possessing imagination.
 Ymaked, 86/32, made.
 Ymedled, 109/4, mixed.
 Ynde, 60/13, India.
 Ynow, Ynowh, 55/34, 56/7, enough.
 Yok, 47/9, 81/27.
 Yolden, 16/10, yielded, given.
 Yowthe, 5/20, youth.
 Yplaunted, 51/16, placed.
 Yporveyid, 120/13, foreseen.
 Ypreysyd, 123/17, valued.
 Yren, 10/4, iron.
 Ys, 72/24, yes.
 Yset, 104/31, set.
 Yseyn, 135/27, seen.
 Ysmyte, 62/24, smitten.
 Ysped, 115/27, despatched.
 Yspendyd, 125/17, examined.
 Ysprad, 47/10, spread.
 Yssues, 62/8, issues, ends.
 Ysustenyd, 126/18, is sustained.
 Ytakus, 114/23, Ithaca.
 Ytravayled, 120/14, laboured.
 Yveles, 85/19, evils.
 Ywoven, 2/20, 105/33, woven.
 Ywroght, 2/24, wrought.
 Yxion, 84/18, Ixion.
 Yyeven, 110/3, given.
 Zeno, 6/19.
 Zepherus, Zephirus, 14/9, 26/27, the westerly wind.
 3eelde, 3elde, 26/32, 41/3, seldom.
 3elde, 26/15, yielded.
 3elyly, 28/29, happily, blissfully.
 3er, 111/28, year.
 3yt, 17/24, yet.



Chaucer Society's Publications: First Series.

10 issue for 1870, in the **First Series**, is,

- V. The Miller's, Reeve's, and Cook's Tales, with an Appendix of the Spurious Tale of Gamelyn, in 6 parallel Texts. (Six-Text, Part II.)

10 issue for 1871, in the **First Series**, is,

- V. The Man of Law's, Shipman's, and Prioress's Tales, with Chaucer's own Tale of Sir Thopas, in 6 parallel Texts from the MSS above named, and 10 coloured drawings of Tellers of Tales, after the originals in the Ellesmere MS. Part III.

- VI. The Man of Law's Tale, from the Ellesmere MS.

- II. " " " " " " Cambridge MS.

- II. " " " " " " Corpus MS.

- X. The Shipman's, Prioress's, and Man of Law's Tales, from the Petworth MS.

- X. The Man of Law's Tale, from the Lansdowne MS.

(each with woodcuts of fourteen drawings of Tellers of Tales in the Ellesmere MS.)

- KI. A Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part I:—1. *'The Dethe of Blaunche the Duchesse,'* from Thynne's ed. of 1532, the Fairfax MS 16, and Tanner MS 346; 2. *'the Complaynt to Pite,'* 3. *'the Parliament of Foules,'* and 4. *'the Complaynt of Mars,'* each from six MSS.

- I. Supplementary Parallel-Texts of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part I, containing 1. *'The Parliament of Foules,'* from three MSS.*

- II. Odd Texts of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part I, containing 1. two MS fragments of *'The Parliament of Foules';* 2. the two differing versions of *'The Prologue to the Legende of Good Women,'* arranged so as to show their differences; 3. an Appendix of Poems attributed to Chaucer, 1. *'The Balade of Pitee by Chauciers,'* II. *'The Cronycle made by Chaucer,'* both from MSS written by Shirley, Chaucer's contemporary.

- V. A One-Text Print of Chaucer's Minor Poems, being the best Text from the Parallel-Text Edition, Part I, containing, I. *The Dethe of Blaunche the Duchesse,* II. *The Complaynt to Pite,* III. *The Parliament of Foules,* IV. *The Complaynt of Mars,* V. *The ABC,* with its original from De DeGuilleville's *Pelerinage de la Vie humaine* (edited from the best Paris MSS by M. Paul Meyer).

10 issue for 1872, in the **First Series**, is,

- V. Chaucer's Tale of Melibe, the Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Wife of Bath's, Friar's, and Summoner's Tales, in 6 parallel Texts from the MSS above named, with the remaining 13 coloured drawings of Tellers of Tales, after the originals in the Ellesmere MS, and with Specimens of the Variations of 30 MSS in the Doctor-Pardoner Link. (6-Text, Pt IV.)

- VI. The Wife's, Friar's, and Summoner's Tales, from the Ellesmere MS, with 9 woodcuts of Tale-Tellers. (Part IV.)

- VII. The Wife's, Friar's, Summoner's, Monk's, and Nun's-Priest's Tales, from the Hengwrt MS, with 23 woodcuts of the Tellers of the Tales. (Part III.)

- VIII. The Wife's, Friar's, and Summoner's Tales, from the Cambridge MS, with 9 woodcuts of Tale-Tellers. (Part IV.)

- IX. A Treatise on the Astrolabe, addressed to his son Lowys, in 1391 A.D., by Geoffrey Chaucer, edited by the Rev. Walter W. Skeat, M.A.

10 issue for 1873, in the **First Series**, is,

- X. The Six-Text Canterbury Tales, Part V, containing the Clerk's and Merchant's Tales.

10 issue for 1874, in the **First Series**, is,

- XI. The Six-Text, Part VI, containing the Squire's and Franklin's Tales.

- XII. The Clerk's, Merchant's, Squire's, Franklin's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Shipman's, Prioress's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus, Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Second Nun's Tales, Ellesmere MS, Part V.

- XIII. The Clerk's, Merchant's, Squire's, Franklin's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Shipman's, Prioress's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus, Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Second Nun's Tales, Cambridge MS, Part V.

- XIV. Squire's, Wife of Bath's, Friar's, Summoner's, Clerk's, Merchant's, Franklin's Tales, Corpus MS, Part IV.

- XV. Squire's, Merchant's, Wife of Bath's, Friar's, Summoner's, Clerk's, Franklin's, Second Nun's Tales, Petworth MS, Part IV.

- XVI. Squire's, Wife of Bath's, Friar's, Summoner's, Clerk's, Merchant's, Franklin's Tales, Lansdowne MS, Part IV.

10 issue for 1875, in the **First Series**, is,

- XVII. The Six-Text, Part VII, the Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, and Manciple's Tales, with the Blank-Parson Link.

- XVIII. Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, Manciple's Tales, Ellesmere MS, Part VI.

* This is reprinted in LIX of First Series.

Chaucer Society's Publications: First Series.

- XXXIX. Manciple's, Man of Law's, Squire's, Merchant's, Franklin's, Second Nun's, Clerk's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Shipman's, Prioress's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus Tales, Hengwrt MS, Part IV.
- XL. Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, Manciple's Tales, Cambridge MS, Part VI.
- XLI. Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Shipman's, Prioress's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus, Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Manciple's Tales, Corpus MS, Part V.
- XLII. Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, Doctor's, Pardoner's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus, Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Manciple's Tales, Petworth MS, Part V.
- XLIII. Second Nun's, Canon's-Yeoman's, Doctor's, Pardoner's, Shipman's, Prioress's Tales, Sir Thopas, Melibeus, Monk's, Nun's-Priest's, Manciple's Tales, Lansdowne MS, Part V.
- XLIV. A detailed Comparison of the *Troilus and Cryseyde* with Boccaccio's *Filistrato*, with a Translation of all Passages used by Chaucer, and an Abstract of the Parts not used, by W. Michael Rossetti, Esq., and with a print of the *Troilus* from the Harleian MS 3943. Part I.
- XLV. Ryime-Index to the Ellesmere MS of the Canterbury Tales, by Henry Cromie, Esq., M.A. In 8vo for the separate Ellesmere MS.
- XLVI. Ryime-Index to the Ellesmere MS, by Henry Cromie, Esq., M.A. In Royal 4to for the *Six-Text*.
- XLVII. Notes and Corrections for the 8vo Ryime-Index, by H. Cromie, Esq., M.A.
- The issue for 1876, in the **First Series**, is,
- XLVIII. Autotype Specimens of the Chief Chaucer MSS, Part I, 16 Autotypes, with a Note on the MSS, by F. J. Furnivall.
- The issue for 1877, in the **First Series**, is,
- XLIX. The Six-Text, Part VIII, containing the Parson's Tale, with a Table of its Contents; and Mr Hy. Cromie's Notes and Corrections for the Ryime-Index (4to.), No. XLV.
- L. The Parson's Tale, Ellesmere MS, Part VII.
- LI. " " " Hengwrt MS, Part V.
- LII. " " " Cambridge MS, Part VII.
- LIII. " " " Corpus MS, Part VI.
- LIV. " " " Petworth MS, Part VI.
- LV. " " " Lansdowne MS, Part VI.
- The issue for 1878, in the **First Series**, is,
- LVI. Autotype Specimens of the Chief Chaucer MSS, Part II: 9 from the Cambridge MS Gg. 4. 27, and 1 from Lord Leonfield's MS.
- LVII. A Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part II:—5. The *A B C*, from 6 MSS; 6. The *Mother of God*, from 3 MSS; 7. *Anelida and Arcyte*, from 5 MSS and Caxton's print; 8. The *Former Age*, from 2 MSS (with the Latin original, and Chaucer's prose Englishing); 9. To his *Scrivener* from Shirley's MS and Stowe's print; 10. The *House of Fame*, from 2 MSS and Caxton's and Thynne's prints.
- The issue for 1879, in the **First Series**, is,
- LVIII. A Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part III, completing the *Parallel-Text*, and containing, 11. The *Legend of Good Women* from 5 MSS and Thynne's print; 12. *Truth* from 6 MSS; 13. The *Compleynt of Venus* from 6 MSS; 14. The *Envoy to Scogan* from 3 MSS; 15. *Marriage*, or The *Envoy to Bukton*, from 1 MS and Notary's and Thynne's prints; 16. *Gentillesse* from 6 MSS; 17. *Proverbs* from 3 MSS; 18. *Stedfastness* from 6 MSS; 19. *Fortune* from 6 MSS; 20. *Chaucer to his empty Purse*, from 6 MSS.
- The issue for 1880, in the **First Series**, is,
- LIX. Supplementary Parallel-Texts of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part II:—1a. The *Parlament of Foules* from 3 MSS; 2. The *A B C* from 6 MSS; 3. *Anelida and Arcyte* from 6 MSS; 4. The *Legend of Good Women*, in whole or part from 4 MSS; 5. The *Complaint of Mars* from 3 MSS; 6. *Truth* from 6 MSS; 7. The *Compleynt of Venus* from 3 MSS; 8. *Gentillesse* from 3 MSS; 9. *Lack of Stedfastness* from Thynne's print and 2 MSS; 10. *Fortune* from 2 MSS and Caxton's print.
- LX. Odd-Texts of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part II, containing, 3. The *A B C*, from 2 MSS; 4. The *House of Fame*, from the Pepys' MS, &c.; 5. The *Legend of Good Women* from 3 MSS; 6. The *Dethe of Blaunche the Duchesse* from 1 MS; 7. The *Complaint to Pity* from 2 MSS; 8. The *Parlament of Foules* from 1 MS; 9. *Truth* from 3 MSS; 10. *Envoy to Scogan* from 1 MS; 11. *Purse* from 1 MS.
- LXI. A One-Text Print of Chaucer's Minor Poems, Part II, containing, VI. *Mother of God*; VII. *Anelida*; VIII. The *Former Age*; IX. *Adam Scrivener*; X. The *House of Fame*; XI. *Legende*; XII. *Truth*; XIII. *Venus*; XIV. *Scogan*; XV. *Marriage*; XVI. *Gentillesse*; XVII. *Proverbs*; XVIII. *Stedfastness*; XIX. *Fortune*; XX. *Purse*.
- LXII. Autotype Specimens of the chief Chaucer MSS. Part III: 2 from Henry V's MS of the *Troilus*, when he was Prince of Wales (now Mr Bacon Frank's); 1 from Shirley's MS of the *ABC* at Ston Coll.

Chaucer Society's Publications: Second Series.

- The issue for 1881, in the **First Series**, is,
I.XIII. A Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's *Troilus & Criseyde* from the Campsall MS, b. 1415 A.D. (written for Henry V when Prince of Wales), Harleian MS. 2280, and Cambr. Univ. Libr. Gg. 4. 27. Part I. Books 1 and 2.
- The issue for 1882, in the **First Series**, is,
LXIV. A Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's *Troilus & Criseyde* from the Campsall MS, before 1415 A.D. (written for Henry V when Prince of Wales), Harleian MS. 2280, and Cambr. Univ. Libr. Gg. 4. 27. Part II. Books 3, 4, 5.
- The issue for 1883, in the **First Series**, is,
LXV. Part II of Mr W. M. Rossetti's Comparison of Chaucer's *Troilus and Criseyde* with Boccaccio's *Filostrato*, completing the work.
- The issue for 1884, in the **First Series**, when ready, will be,
LXVI—LXXI. 6 Appendixes to the 6 MSS of the Six-Text, with Wood-cuts and colored Lithographs of 6 Tellers of Tales and of 6 emblematical Figures from the Cambridge Univ. MS, Gg. 4. 27, &c., and Process Engravings, for the Ellesmere MS Part, of the 23 Ellesmere MS Miniatures. The Hengwrt MS, Part VI, contains The Canon's-Yeoman's Tale from the Lichfield Cathedral MS.
- LXXII.** The Six-Text, Part IX, with colored Lithographs of 6 Tellers of Tales and 6 emblematical Figures from the Cambridge Univers. MS Gg. 4. 27; Forewords. Title-pages for the three volumes, &c.; and Prof. Hiram Corson's Index to the Subjects and Names of *The Canterbury Tales*.
- The issue for 1885, in the **First Series**, is,
LXXIII. The Harleian MS 7334 of *The Canterbury Tales*, with Woodcuts of 23 Tellers of Tales from Ellesmere MS, &c.
- LXXIV.** Autotype Specimens of the chief Chaucer MSS. Part IV. One of the Ellesmere MS.
- The issue for 1886, in the **First Series**, will be
LXXV. Chaucer's *Boece* from the Cambridge University MS. II. 3. 21. [Issued.]
LXXVI. Chaucer's *Boece* from the Additional MS 10,310 in the British Museum, as edited by the Rev. Dr. Richard Morris for the Early English Text Society's Extra Series in 1868. [Issued.]
LXXVII, LXXVIII. A *Rhyme-Index* to Chaucer's *Minor Poems*, by Miss Isabel Marshall and Miss Lela Porter, with an Index by Prof. Corson to the Subjects and Names of the *Minor Poems* (if ready). Both in Royal 4to for the Parallel-Text, and in 8vo for the One-Text print of the *Minor Poems*. (Prof. Hiram Corson has agreed to edit the Society's *Chaucer Concordance*.)

SECOND SERIES.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1868 is,

1. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer, by Alexander J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part I. This work includes an amalgamation of Prof. F. J. Child's two Papers on the use of the final -e by Chaucer (in T. Wright's ed. of *The Canterbury Tales*) and by Gower (in Dr Pauli's ed. of the *Confessio Amantis*).
2. Essays on Chaucer, his Words and Works, Part I.: 1. Prof. Ebert's Review of Sandras's *Etude sur Chaucer*, translated by J. W. van Rees Hoets, M.A.; 2. A 13th-century Latin Treatise on the *Chilindre* (of the *Shipman's Tale*), edited by Mr. E. Brock.
3. A Temporary Preface to the Society's Six-Text edition of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, Part I, attempting to show the right Order of the Tales, and the Days and Stages of the Pilgrimage, &c. &c., by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1869 is,

4. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer, by Alexander J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part II.
- Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1870 is,
5. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer, by Alexander J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1871 is,

6. Trial-Forewords to my Parallel-Text edition of Chaucer's *Minor Poems* for the Chaucer Society (with a try to set Chaucer's Works in their right order of Time), by Fredk. J. Furnivall. Part I.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1872 is,

7. Originals and Analogues of some of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, Part I. 1. The original of the *Man of Law's Tale* of Constance, from the French Chronicle of Nicholas Trivet, Arundel MS 56, ab. 1340 A.D., collated with the later copy, ab. 1400, in the National Library at Stockholm; copied and edited, with a translation, by Mr. Edmund Brock. 2. The Tale of "Merelaus the Emperor," from the Early-English version of the *Gesta Romanorum* in Harl. MS 7333; and 3. Part of Matthew Paris's *Vita Offa Primi*, both stories illustrating incidents in the *Man of Law's Tale*. 4. Two French Fabliaux like the *Reeve's Tale*. 5. Two Latin Stories like the *Friar's Tale*.

Chaucer Society's Publications: Second Series.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1873 is,

8. Allertano of Brescia's *Liber Consilii et Consolationis*, A.D. 1246 (the Latin source of the French original of Chaucer's *Melibe*), edited from the MSS, by Dr. Thor Sundby.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1874 is,

9. Essays on Chaucer, his Words and Works, Part II.: 3. John of Hoveden's *Practica Chilindri*, edited from the MS, with a translation, by Mr. E. Brock. 4. Chaucer's use of the final -e, by Joseph Payne, Esq. 5. Mrs. E. Barrett-Browning on Chaucer: being those parts of her review of the *Book of the Poets*, 1842, which relate to him; here reprinted by leave of Mr Robert Browning. 6. Professor Bernhard Ten-Brink's critical edition of Chaucer's *Compleynite to Pite*.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1875 is,

10. Originals and Analogues of Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, Part II. 6. Alphonsus of Lincoln, a Story like the *Priores's Tale*. 7. How Reynard caught Chanticleer, the source of the *Nun's-Priest's Tale*. 8. Two Italian Stories, and a Latin one, like the *Pardoner's Tale*. 9. The Tale of the Priest's Bladder, a story like the *Summoner's Tale*, being 'Li dis de le Vescie a Prestre,' par Jacques de Basiw. 10. Petrarch's Latin Tale of Grisoldis (with Boccaccio's Story from which it was re-told), the original of the *Clerk's Tale*. 11. Five Versions of a Pear-tree Story like that in the *Merchant's Tale*. 12. Four Versions of The Life of Saint Cecilia, the original of the *Second Nun's Tale*.

11. Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer, by Alexander J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part IV.

12. Life-Records of Chaucer, Part I, The Robberies of Chaucer by Richard Breteville and others at Westminster, and at Hatcham, Surrey, on Tuesday, Sept. 6, 1390, with some Account of the Robbers, from the Enrolments in the Public Record Office, by Walford D. Selby, Esq., of the Public Record Office.

13. Thynne's Animadversions (1599) on Speght's *Chaucers Workes*, re-edited from the unique MS, by Fredk. J. Furnivall, with fresh Lives of William and Francis Thynne, and the only known fragment of *The Pilgrims Tale*.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1876 is,

14. Life-Records of Chaucer, Part II, The Household Ordinances of King Edward II, June 1323 (as englisht by Francis Tate in March 1601 A.D.), with extracts from those of King Edward IV, to show the probable duties of CHAUCER as Valet or Yeoman of the Chamber, and Esquire, to Edward III, of whose Household Book no MS is known; together with Chaucer's Oath as Controller of the Customs; and an enlarged Autotype of Hoccleve's Portrait of Chaucer; edited by F. J. Furnivall.

15. Originals and Analogues of Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, Part III. 13. The Story of Constance, for the *Man of Law's Tale*. 14. The Boy killed by a Jew for singing 'Gaude Maria,' an Analogue of the *Priores's Tale*. 15. The Paris Beggar-boy murdered by a Jew for singing 'Alma redemptoris mater!' an Analogue of the *Priores's Tale*; with a Poem by Lydgate.

16. *Essays on Chaucer, his Words and Works*, Part III. 7. Chaucer's Prioress, her Nun Chaplain and 3 Priests, illustrated from the Paper Survey of St Mary's Abbey, Winchester, by F. J. Furnivall. 8. Alliteration in Chaucer, by Dr. Paul Lindner. 9. Chaucer a Wicliffite; a critical Examination of the *Parsons Tale*, by Herr Hugo Simon. 10. The sources of the Wife of Bath's Prologue: Chaucer not a borrower from John of Salisbury, by the Rev. W. W. Woollecombe.

17. Supplementary Canterbury Tales: 1. The Tale of *Beryn*, with a Prologue of the merry Adventure of the Pardoner with a Tapster at Canterbury, re-edited from the Duke of Northumberland's unique MS, by Fredk. J. Furnivall. Part I, the Text, with Wm. Smith's Map of Canterbury in 1588, now first engraved from his unique MS., and Ogilby's Plan of the Road from London to Canterbury in 1675.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1878 (there was none in 1877) is,

18. *Essays on Chaucer, his Words and Works*, Part IV. 11. On *here* and *there* in Chaucer (his Pronunciation of the two *e*'s), by Dr. R. F. Weymouth; 12. On *a*. An Original Version of the *Knight's Tale*; *β*. the Date (1381) and Personages of the *Parlament of Foules*; *γ*. on *Anelida and Areyte*, on Lollius, on Chaucer, and Boccaccio, &c., by Dr. John Koch, with a fragment of a later *Palamon and Areyte* from the Dublin MS D. 4. 18.

Of the **Second Series**, the issue for 1884 (none in 1879, 80, 81, 82, 83) is,

19. *Essays on Chaucer, his Words and Works*, Part V: 13. Chaucer's *Pardoner*: his character illustrated by documents of his time, by Dr J. J. Jusserand. 14. Why the *Romaunt of the Rose* is not Chaucer's, by Prof. Skeat, M.A. 15. Chaucer's *Shipman*, and his Bargo 'The Maudelayne,' by P. Q. Karkoek, Esq. 16. Chaucer's *Parsons's Tale* compared with Frère Lorens's *Somme des Vices et des Vertus*, by Wilhelm Eilers, Ph.D., 1882, englisht 1884. 17. On Chaucer's Reputed Works, by T. L. Kingston-Oliphant, M.A.

Among the Texts and Essays, &c., preparing for the Chaucer Society are:—
Originals and Analogs of the Canterbury Tales. Part IV. Eastern Analogs, by W. A. Clouston.

Early English Pronunciation, with especial reference to Shakspeare and Chaucer, by Alexander J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part V. [*This will probably go to Press in 1887.*]

The Tale of *Beryn*, Part II. Introduction and Glossary, by F. J. Furnivall and W. G. Stone, with an Essay on Analogues of the Tale, by W. A. Clouston.

Chaucer's *Road to Canterbury*, with Ogilby's Plan of it, 1675, and William Smith's Plan of the City of Canterbury in 1588; by the Rev. W. A. Scott Robertson, M.A., Hon. Sec. of the Kent Archaeological Institute.

Life-Records of Chaucer, Part III, The Household book of Isabella, wife of Prince Lionel, third son of Edward III, in which the name of GEOFFREY CHAUCER first occurs; edited from the unique MS in the Brit. Mus., by Edward A. Bond, LL.D., Chief Librarian. Part IV, Enrolments and Documents from the Public Record Office, the City of London Town-Clerk's Office, &c., edited by Walford D. Selby, Esq., and F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D.

'A detaild Comparison of Chaucer's *Knight's Tale* with the *Teseide* of Boccaccio,' by HENRY WARD, Esq., of the MS Department of the British Museum. [*At Press.*]

Early English Text Society.

Director: Dr F. J. FURNIVALL, 3, St George's Square, London, N.W.

Hon. Sec.: W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N.

Founded by Dr Furnivall in 1864 to print in its Original Series the whole of our unprinted MS literature; and in its Extra Series to reprint in careful editions all that is most valuable of printed MSS and early printed books. The publications of the first two years in its Original Series have been reprinted, and those for its third year, 1866, will follow. The Subscription, which constitutes Membership, is £1 1s. a year [and £1 1s. (Large Paper, £2 12s. 6d.) additional for the EXTRA SERIES], due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid to the Hon. Secretary, Mr Dalziel.

The Wyclif Society.

Founded by Dr Furnivall in 1882, to print Wyclif's Latin Works. £1 1s. a year.
Hon. Sec. J. W. Standerwick, General Post Office, London, E.C.

New Shakspeare Society.

Director: Dr F. J. FURNIVALL, 3, St George's Square, London, N.W.

Hon. Sec.: K. GRAHAME, Esq., 65, Chelsea Gardens, Chelsea Bridge Road, S.W.

Founded by Dr Furnivall in 1873 to further the study of Shakspeare's works chronologically and as a whole, and to print Parallel and other Texts of the Quartos and Folio of Shakspeare's Plays, and other works illustrating Shakspeare's time and the History of the Drama. Subscription, which constitutes membership, One Guinea, to be paid to the Hon. Sec.

Shakspeare Quarto Facsimiles, issued under Dr Furnivall's superintendence, by Mr W. Griggs and Mr Charles Praetorius, and published by Mr B. Quaritch, 15, Piccadilly, W. The set of 40, at 6s. each; singly, 10s. 6d.

The Browning Society.

Founded in July 1881 by Dr Furnivall and Miss Hickey, for the study of the Works of ROBERT BROWNING, the performance of his Plays, &c. Subscription 1 guinea a year. Hon. Sec. J. Dykes Campbell, Esq., 29, Albert Hall Mansions, London, S.W.

The Shelley Society.

Founded in Dec. 1885 by Dr Furnivall, to promote the study of Shelley, the performance of his *Cenci*, reprints of his rarest original editions, &c. Subscription 1 guinea a year, to be paid to S. E. Preston, 88, Eaton Place, S.W., or W. M. Rossetti, 5, Endsleigh Gardens, N.W.

The Ballad Society.

was established by Dr Furnivall, on the completion of the print of the Percy Folio MS, to reprint the known collections of Ballads, like the Roxburghe, Bagford, Rawlinson, Douce, &c., and to print Ballads from MSS, and books illustrating Ballad-History. The Ballad Society books are printed in demy 8vo, like those of the Early English Text Society, and the Percy Folio (but on toned paper for the sake of the Woodcuts), and also in super-royal 8vo, on Whatman's eighty-shilling ribbed paper. The yearly Subscription, which constitutes Membership, for the demy 8vos is *One Guinea* a year; that for the royal ribbed papers *Three Guineas*. The subscriptions date from January 1, 1868. The Society's books are not on sale separately to the public. Twenty-six have been issued. More Members are wanted.

Subscriptions should be paid either to the account of *The Ballad Society* at the Alliance Bank, Bartholomew Lane, London, E.C., or (by Post Office Order, payable at the Chief Office, E.C.) to the Hon. Sec. —

W. A. DALZIEL, Esq.,
67, Victoria Rd, Finsbury Park, N.

No. 1. Ballads and Poems from Manuscripts. Vol. I, Part 1, on the Condition of England in the Reigns of Henry VIII. and Edw. VI. (including the State of the Clergy, Monks, and Friars) contains (besides a long Introduction) the following poems, &c.: Now a Dayes, ab. 1520 A.D.; Vox Populi Vox Dei, A.D. 1547-8; The Ruyn' of a Ream'; The Image of Ypocresye, A.D. 1533; Against the Blaspheming English Lutherans and the Poisonous Dragon Luther; The Spoiling of the Abbeyes; The Overthrowe of the Abbeyes, a Tale of Robin Hood; De Monasteriis Dirutis. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A. 1868.

No. 2. Ballads from Manuscripts. Vol. I, Part 2, contains Ballads on Wolsey, Anne Boleyn, Somerset, Lady Jane Grey, &c., with an Index and Glossary, by J. H. Backhouse, Esq., and Forewords to the whole Volume. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A. 1872.

No. 3, 10. Ballads from Manuscripts. Volume II, Part 1: The Poore Mans Pittance. by RICHARD WILLIAMS, containyng three severall subjects:—(1.) The firste, the fall and complaynte of Anthonie Babington, whoe, with others, were executed for highe treason in the feildes nere lincolns Inne, in the yeare of our lorde—1586. (2.) The seconde containes the life and Deathe of Roberte, lorde Deverox, Earle of Essex: whoe was beheaded in the towre of london on ash-wensdaye mornynge, *Ann*—1601. (3.) The laste, Intituled "acclamatio patrie," containyng the horribl[e] treason that weare pretended agaynste your Maestie, to be donne on the parliament howse The seconde [third] yeare of your Maestie Raygne [1603]. Edited by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A. 1868. **Vol. II, Part 2**, containing Ballads on Queen Elizabeth, Essex, Campion, Drake, Raleigh, Fro-bisher, Bacon, etc. Edited by W. R. MORFILL, M.A., Oxford. 1873.

No. 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 12, 13. The Roxburghe Ballads. Part 1 (1869), Part 2 (1870), Part 3 (1871), Part 4 (1872), Part 5 (1873), Part 6 (1874), Part 7 (1875), Part 8 (1879), with short Notes by W. CHAPPELL, Esq., and copies of the original Woodcuts by Mr W. H. HOOPER. 1869.

No. 7. Captain Cox, his Ballads and Books, or, ROBERT LANEHAM'S Letter: Whearin part of the entertainment untoo the Queenz Majesty at Killingworth Castl. in Warwik Sheer in this Soomerz Progress .1575. is signified; from a freend officer attendant in the Court, unto hiz freend, a Citizen and Merchaut of London. Re-edited, with accounts of all Captain Cox's accessible Books and Ballads, and a comparison of them with those in the *Complaynt of Scotlande*, 1519 A.D., by F. J. FURNIVALL, M.A. 1871.

No. 11. Love-Poems and Humourous ones, from a volume in the British Museum, edited by F. J. FURNIVALL. 1874.

No. 14, 15, 16, 17. The Bagford Ballads, edited by the Rev. J. W. EUSWORTH, M.A. Part 1 (1876), Parts 2 and 3 (1877), Part 4 (1878); Supplement: The Amanda Group (1880).

Nos. 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26. The Roxburghe Ballads, Part 10 (1881), Part 11 (1882), Part 12 (1883), Part 13 (1884), Parts 14 and 15 (1885). Edited, with Introductions, Notes, and copies of all original Woodcuts drawn and engraved, by the Rev. J. W. EUSWORTH, M.A., F.S.A.

Preparing:

The Roxburghe Ballads. Vol. VI and Vol. VII. By the Rev. J. W. EUSWORTH, M.A., F.S.A.

The Civil War and Protectorate Ballads. Edited by the Rev. J. W. EUSWORTH, M.A., F.S.A.







APR 29 1936

